

# THE ABSOLUTE GALOIS GROUP OF A PSEUDO $p$ -ADICALLY CLOSED FIELD

Dan Haran and Moshe Jarden\*

Tel Aviv University

## Table of contents

Introduction . . . . .	1
<b>Part A. <math>\Gamma</math>-structures . . . . .</b>	<b>5</b>
1. Definition of $\Gamma$ -structures . . . . .	5
2. Basic properties of $\Gamma$ -structures . . . . .	9
3. The $\Gamma$ -structure $\Gamma_{e,m}$ . . . . .	14
4. $\Gamma$ -projective groups . . . . .	16
5. Projective $\Gamma$ -structures . . . . .	22
<b>Part B. The <math>G(\mathbb{Q}_p)</math>-structure associated with Galois extension . . . . .</b>	<b>28</b>
6. $p$ -adically closed fields . . . . .	28
7. $F$ -closed fields . . . . .	33
8. Sites . . . . .	38
9. $\tilde{\Theta}$ -sites . . . . .	44
10. The space of sites of a Galois extension . . . . .	48
11. Characterization of $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$ . . . . .	54
12. Pseudo $p$ -adically closed fields . . . . .	58
<b>Part C. Projective <math>G(\mathbb{Q}_p)</math>-structures as absolute <math>G(\mathbb{Q}_p)</math>-Galois structures . . . . .</b>	<b>64</b>
13. Restriction maps of spaces of sites . . . . .	64
14. Realization of $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structures as $\mathbf{G}(F/E)$ . . . . .	74
15. The main results . . . . .	79
References . . . . .	83

---

\* The work was partly done while Jarden was a member in the Institute for Advanced Study, Princeton, New Jersey.

## Introduction

The main problem in Galois theory is to describe the absolute Galois group  $G(K)$  of a field  $K$ . This problem is solved in the local case, i.e., when  $K$  is algebraically, real or  $p$ -adically closed. In the first case  $G(K)$  is trivial, in the second  $G(K) \cong \mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z}$  and in the third case it is given by generators and relations (Jannsen-Wingberg [JW] and Wingberg [W]). The next case to consider is when  $K$  is “pseudo closed”. A field  $K$  is called **pseudo algebraically** (resp., **real**,  **$p$ -adically closed**) (abbreviation : PAC, PRC and PpC, respectively) if every absolutely irreducible variety  $V$  defined over  $K$  has a  $K$ -rational point, provided  $V$  has a  $\overline{K}$ -rational simple point for each algebraic (resp., real,  $p$ -adic) closure  $\overline{K}$  of  $K$ . The absolute Galois group of a pseudo closed field is best described in terms of solvability of  $\Gamma$ -embedding problems, where  $\Gamma$  is 1 (resp.,  $\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z}$ ,  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ ):

Let  $G$  be a profinite group. Consider a diagram

$$(1) \quad \begin{array}{ccc} & G & \\ & \downarrow \varphi & \\ B & \xrightarrow{\alpha} & A \end{array}$$

where  $\alpha$  is an epimorphism of finite groups and  $\varphi$  is a homomorphism. We call (1) a finite  **$\Gamma$ -embedding problem** for  $G$  if for each closed subgroup  $H$  of  $G$  which is isomorphic to  $\Gamma$  there exists a homomorphism  $\gamma_H: H \rightarrow B$  such that  $\alpha \circ \gamma_H = \text{Res}_H \varphi$ . The  $\Gamma$ -embedding problem (1) is **solvable** if there exists a homomorphism  $\gamma: G \rightarrow B$  such that  $\alpha \circ \gamma = \varphi$ . We call  $G$   **$\Gamma$ -projective** if every finite  $\Gamma$ -embedding problem for  $G$  is solvable, and if the collection of all closed subgroups of  $G$  which are isomorphic to  $\Gamma$  is topologically closed. For  $\Gamma = 1$  (resp.,  $\Gamma = \mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z}$ ,  $\Gamma = G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ ) we obtain **projective** (resp., **real projective**,  **$p$ -adically projective**) groups. Note that the local-global principle included in the definition of pseudo closed fields is also reflected in the definition of  $\Gamma$ -projective groups.

**THEOREM:** *If  $K$  is a PAC (resp., PRC, PpC) field, then  $G(K)$  is projective (resp., real projective,  $p$ -adically projective). Conversely, if  $G$  is a projective (resp. real projective,  $p$ -adically projective) group, then there exists a PAC (resp., PRC, PpC) field  $K$  such that  $G(K) \cong G$ .*

Ax [A1, p. 269] and Lubotzky-v.d. Dries [LD, p. 44] prove the theorem for PAC fields. We prove the theorem for PRC fields in [HJ]. The goal of this work is to prove the theorem for PpC fields.

As in the PRC case, the easier direction is to prove that if  $K$  is PpC, then  $G(K)$  is  $p$ -adically projective. For the converse we must develop a theory of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structures, which replaces the Artin-Schreier structures of the PRC case.

There are two intrinsic difficulties in going over from PRC fields to PpC fields. The first one is that the group  $\Gamma$  is no longer the finite group  $\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z}$  but rather the infinite group  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ . Fortunately  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  is finitely generated and with a trivial center. So we consider in Part A of the work a finitely generated profinite group  $\Gamma$  with a trivial center and define a  $\Gamma$ -**structure** as a structure  $\mathbf{G} = \langle G, X, d \rangle$ , where  $G$  is a profinite group which acts continuously and regularly on a Boolean space  $X$  (i.e., for each  $x \in X$  and  $\sigma \in G$  the equality  $x^\sigma = x$  implies  $\sigma = 1$ ), and  $d$  is a continuous map from  $X$  into  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  which commutes with the action of  $G$ . The assumption that  $\Gamma$  is finitely generated implies that  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  is a Boolean space. The regularity assumption is essential in constructing cartesian squares of  $\Gamma$ -structures. The latter are essential in reducing arbitrary embedding problems to finite embedding problems. In Section 5 we associate a  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\mathbf{G}$  with each  $\Gamma$ -projective group  $G$  and prove that  $\mathbf{G}$  is projective. The proof depends on an extra assumption which we make on  $\Gamma$ . For each  $e$  and  $m$ ,  $0 \leq e \leq m$ , we consider the free product  $\Gamma_{e,m}$  of  $e$  copies of  $\Gamma$  and the free profinite group  $\widehat{F}_{m-e}$ . We assume that  $\Gamma$  has a finite quotient  $\bar{\Gamma}$  with this property: each closed subgroup  $H$  of  $\Gamma_{e,m}$  which is a quotient of  $\Gamma$  and has  $\bar{\Gamma}$  as a quotient (we call it a **large quotient** of  $\Gamma$ ) is isomorphic to  $\Gamma$ .

The second difficulty that arises in dealing with PpC fields is that two  $p$ -adic closures  $E$  and  $F$  of a field  $K$  are not necessarily  $K$ -isomorphic. Fortunately Macintyre [M] gives a criterion for isomorphism:  $E \cong_K F$  if and only if  $K \cap E^n = K \cap F^n$  for each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ . As  $E^\times / (E^\times)^n \cong \mathbb{Q}_p^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$ ,  $E$  is characterized up to  $K$ -isomorphism by a homomorphism  $\varphi: K^\times \rightarrow \varprojlim \mathbb{Q}_p^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$  with  $K^\times \cap E^n$  as the kernel of the induced map  $K^\times \rightarrow \mathbb{Q}_p^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$ ,  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ . In addition, the unique  $p$ -adic valuation defines a place  $\pi: K \rightarrow \mathbb{Q}_p \cup \{\infty\}$  such that  $\pi(u) \in \mathbb{Q}_p^\times$  implies  $\pi(u) = \varphi(u)$ . Here we have identified

$\mathbb{Q}_p^\times$  as a subgroup of  $\Phi = \varprojlim \mathbb{Q}_p^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$ . We let  $\Theta = \mathbb{Q}_p \cup \{\infty\} \cup \Phi$  and call  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$  a  $\Theta$ -site of  $K$ . An extension of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  to  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}_p$  replaces  $\Theta$  by  $\tilde{\Theta}$  and  $\Theta$ -sites by  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -sites. With every Galois extension  $L/K$  we associate the **space of sites**  $X(L/K)$ . This is the collection of all  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -sites  $\theta$  of  $L$  such that  $\theta(K) \subseteq \Theta$ . It is a Boolean space and  $\mathcal{G}(L/K)$  acts continuously and regularly on it. It replaces the space of orderings of Artin-Schreier structures. We also use regularity to define a map  $d: X(L/K) \rightarrow \text{Hom}(G(\mathbb{Q}_p), \mathcal{G}(L/K))$  which commutes with the action of  $\mathcal{G}(L/K)$ . A version of Krasner's lemma proves that  $d$  is continuous. Thus  $\mathbf{G}(L/K) = \langle \mathcal{G}(L/K), X(L/K), d \rangle$  is a  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure.

In Section 11 we generalize a theorem of Neukirch and characterize  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}} \cap \mathbb{Q}_p$  by a large finite quotient of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ . Then we realize, for  $\Gamma = G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ , each  $\Gamma_{e,m}$  as absolute Galois group of a field  $K$ , algebraic over  $K$  (Section 12). The combination of these results shows that the above assumptions on  $\Gamma$  are satisfied in this case.

In part C we construct for each  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure  $\mathbf{G}$  a Galois extension  $F/E$  such that  $E$  is PpC and  $\mathbf{G}(F/E) \cong \mathbf{G}$ . The restriction map  $\text{Res}: \mathbf{G}(\tilde{E}/E) \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(F/E)$  is a **cover** (i.e., if  $x, x' \in X(\tilde{E}/E)$  are mapped onto the same element of  $X(F/E)$ , then  $x' = x^\sigma$  for some  $\sigma \in G(E)$ ). Hence, if  $\mathbf{G}$  is projective,  $\text{Res}$  has a section and therefore  $\mathbf{G} \cong \mathbf{G}(\tilde{E}/E_1)$  for some algebraic extension  $E_1$  of  $E$ . Unfortunately unlike for PAC and PRC fields,  $E_1$  need not be PpC. However, an extra transcendental construction finally proves the existence of a PpC field  $K$  such that  $\mathbf{G}(K) \cong \mathbf{G}$ . In particular  $G(K) \cong G$ . This concludes the proof of the Theorem for PpC fields.

## Notation

$\tilde{K}$  = the algebraic closure of a field  $K$ .

If  $K$  is a field of characteristic 0, then  $K_{\text{alg}} = K \cap \tilde{\mathbb{Q}}$ ,

$G(K)$  = the absolute Galois group of  $K$ .

For a place  $\pi$  of a field  $K$ ,  $O_\pi = \{x \in K \mid \pi(x) \neq \infty\}$  is the valuation ring and  $U_\pi = \{u \in K \mid \pi(u) \neq 0, \infty\}$  is the group of units and  $\pi(K) = \pi(O_\pi)$  is the residue field of  $\pi$ .

If  $S$  is a set of automorphisms of a field  $F$ , then  $F(S)$  is the fixed field of  $S$  in  $F$ . In particular for  $\sigma = (\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_m)$ ,  $F(\sigma)$  is the fixed field of  $\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_m$  in  $F$ .

For an abelian group  $A$  and a prime  $l$ ,  $A_l$  is the  $l$ -torsion part of  $A$ .

$\mathbb{Q}_p$  = the field of  $p$ -adic numbers.

$\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$  = the algebraic part of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ .

$\mathbb{Z}_p$  = the ring of  $p$ -adic integers.

$\mathbb{Z}_p^\times$  = the group of units of  $\mathbb{Z}_p$ .

$\mathbb{F}_p$  = the field with  $p$ -elements.

In Part A,  $\Gamma$  is a fixed finitely generated group; in Parts B and C,  $\Gamma = G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ .

## Part A. $\Gamma$ -Structures.

We fix for all of Part A a finitely generated profinite group  $\Gamma$ . In particular  $\Gamma$  has for each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  only finitely many open subgroups of index  $n$ . In Sections 1 and 2 we define and discuss  $\Gamma$ -structures. Later (Section 3) we require that  $\Gamma$  share some properties with  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ . This is used to prove properties of  $\Gamma$ -projective groups and projective  $\Gamma$ -structures (Section 4 and 5).

### 1. Definition of $\Gamma$ -structures.

Recall that a **Boolean space**  $X$  is an inverse limit of finite discrete spaces. Alternatively  $X$  is a totally disconnected compact Hausdorff space [HJ, Definition 1.1]. A **profinite transformation group** is a pair  $(X, G)$ , with  $X$  a Boolean space and  $G$  a profinite group that acts continuously on  $X$ :  $(x, \sigma) \mapsto x^\sigma$ .

For each profinite group  $G$  consider the collection  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  of continuous homomorphisms from  $\Gamma$  into  $G$ . Each homomorphism  $h: G \rightarrow G'$  naturally induces a map  $h_*: \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G) \rightarrow \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G')$  by  $h_*(\psi) = h \circ \psi$ . Thus  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G) = \varprojlim \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G/N)$ , where  $N$  ranges over all open normal subgroups of  $G$ . Since each  $\psi \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G/N)$  is determined by its values on a finite set of generators of  $\Gamma$ , and since  $G/N$  is finite,  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G/N)$  is a finite set. It follows that  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  is a Boolean space. Obviously, the above map  $h_*$  is continuous.

The group  $G$  acts continuously on  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  by

$$\psi^\tau(g) = \tau^{-1}\psi(g)\tau, \quad \psi \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G), \quad \tau \in G, \quad g \in \Gamma.$$

Thus  $(\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G), G)$  is a profinite transformation group and  $(h_*, h)$  is a morphism of profinite transformation groups (i.e.,  $h_*(\psi^\tau) = h_*(\psi)^{h(\tau)}$  for  $\psi \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  and  $\tau \in G$ ).

For a profinite group  $G$  denote the set of all closed subgroups of  $G$  by  $\text{Subg}(G)$ . Each homomorphism  $h: G \rightarrow G'$  maps closed subgroups of  $G$  onto closed subgroups of  $G'$  and thus naturally induces a map  $h_*: \text{Subg}(G) \rightarrow \text{Subg}(G')$ . Compactness of  $G$  implies that  $\text{Subg}(G) = \varprojlim \text{Subg}(G/N)$ , where  $N$  ranges over all open normal subgroups. Thus  $\text{Subg}(G)$  is a Boolean space.

Let  $\text{Im}: \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G) \rightarrow \text{Subg}(G)$  be the map that assigns to each  $\psi \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  its image  $\text{Im}(\psi) = \psi(\Gamma)$  in  $G$ . For an open normal subgroup  $N$  of  $G$  let  $\psi_N \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G/N)$  be the homomorphism induced by  $\psi$ . A standard compactness argument shows that  $\text{Im}(\psi) = \varprojlim \text{Im}(\psi_N)$ . Therefore  $\text{Im}: \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G) \rightarrow \text{Subg}(G)$  is the inverse limit of the maps  $\text{Im}: \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G/N) \rightarrow \text{Subg}(G/N)$ . In particular  $\text{Im}$  is a continuous map.

DEFINITION 1.1: A **weak  $\Gamma$ -structure** is a system  $\mathbf{G} = \langle G, X, d \rangle$ , where  $G$  is a profinite group,  $X$  is a Boolean space on which  $G$  continuously acts, and  $d: X \rightarrow \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  is a continuous map such that

$$(1) \quad d(x^\sigma) = d(x)^\sigma \text{ for all } x \in X \text{ and } \sigma \in G.$$

Call  $\mathbf{G}$  a  **$\Gamma$ -structure** if in addition the action of  $G$  on  $X$  is **regular**, i.e.,

$$(2) \text{ for each } x \in X, x^\sigma = x \text{ implies } \sigma = 1.$$

We call  $X$  the **space of sites**,  $d$  the **forgetful map** and  $X/G$  the **space of orbits of  $\mathbf{G}$** . The latter quotient space is Boolean [HJ, Claim 1.6]. For  $x \in X$  we call  $D(x) = \text{Im}(d(x))$  the **decomposition group** of  $x$ . By (1),  $D(x^\sigma) = D(x)^\sigma$  for all  $x \in X$  and  $\sigma \in G$ . Since  $\text{Im}$  is continuous so is the map  $x \mapsto D(x)$  from  $X$  into  $\text{Subg}(G)$ .

Unless explicitly stated otherwise, the underlying group, the space of sites and the forgetful map of a  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\mathbf{G}$  will be denoted by  $G$ ,  $X(\mathbf{G})$  and  $d$ , respectively. Analogously for  $\mathbf{H}$ ,  $\mathbf{A}$ ,  $\mathbf{B}$ , etc.

A weak  $\Gamma$  structure  $\mathbf{G}$  is said to be **finite** if both  $G$  and  $X(\mathbf{G})$  are finite.

DEFINITION 1.2: A **morphism**  $\varphi: \mathbf{H} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}$  of (weak)  $\Gamma$ -structures is a pair consisting of a continuous homomorphism  $\varphi: H \rightarrow G$  and a continuous map  $\varphi: X(\mathbf{H}) \rightarrow X(\mathbf{G})$  such that

$$(3a) \quad \varphi(x^\sigma) = \varphi(x)^{\varphi(\sigma)} \text{ for all } x \in X(\mathbf{H}) \text{ and } \sigma \in H; \text{ and}$$

$$(3b) \quad d(\varphi(x)) = \varphi \circ d(x) \text{ for all } x \in X(\mathbf{H}).$$

Call a morphism  $\varphi: \mathbf{H} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}$  an **epimorphism** if  $\varphi(H) = G$  and  $\varphi(X(\mathbf{H})) = X(\mathbf{G})$ . The epimorphism  $\varphi$  is a **cover** if

$$(3c) \text{ for all } x, x' \in X(\mathbf{H}) \text{ such that } \varphi(x) = \varphi(x') \text{ there exists } \sigma \in H \text{ such that } x^\sigma = x'.$$

If  $\varphi: \mathbf{H} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}$  is a morphism, then the map  $\varphi: X(\mathbf{H}) \rightarrow X(\mathbf{G})$  induces a continuous map  $\bar{\varphi}: X(\mathbf{H})/H \rightarrow X(\mathbf{G})/G$  of the respective orbit spaces. Note that  $\varphi$  is a cover if and only if

(3c')  $\varphi(H) = G$  and  $\bar{\varphi}$  is a bijection (therefore a homeomorphism).

Also

(3d) if  $\mathbf{H}$  and  $\mathbf{G}$  are  $\Gamma$  structures, then  $\sigma$  in (3c) is unique (by (2)) and  $\sigma \in \text{Ker}(\varphi)$  (by (3a)).

Next we consider quotients of weak  $\Gamma$ -structures. Let  $\mathbf{G} = \langle G, X, d \rangle$  be a weak  $\Gamma$ -structure and  $N$  a closed normal subgroup of  $G$ . Let  $\varphi_N = (h, \eta): (X, G) \rightarrow (X/N, G/N)$  be the canonical quotient map of transformation groups [HJ, Claim 1.6]. Define  $\bar{d}: X/N \rightarrow \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G/N)$  by  $\bar{d}(h(x)) = \eta \circ d(x)$ , for  $x \in X$ . Thus the homomorphism  $\eta_*: \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G) \rightarrow \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G/N)$  induced by  $\eta$  (Section 1) satisfies  $\eta_* \circ d = \bar{d} \circ h$ . Since the maps  $\eta_*$  and  $d$  are continuous and  $h$  is open [HJ, Claim 1.6],  $\bar{d}$  is continuous. It follows that  $\mathbf{G}/N = \langle G/N, X/N, \bar{d} \rangle$  is a weak  $\Gamma$ -structure and  $\varphi_N: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}/N$  is a cover. Moreover, if  $\mathbf{G}$  is a  $\Gamma$ -structure, then so is  $\mathbf{G}/N$ . Conversely, each morphism  $\varphi: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}'$  of weak  $\Gamma$ -structures with  $N \leq \text{Ker}(\varphi)$  canonically induces a morphism  $\bar{\varphi}: \mathbf{G}/N \rightarrow \mathbf{G}'$  such that  $\bar{\varphi} \circ \varphi_N = \varphi$ . If  $\mathbf{G}'$  is a  $\Gamma$ -structure,  $\varphi$  is a cover and  $\text{Ker}(\varphi) = N$ , then  $\bar{\varphi}$  is an isomorphism.

An inverse limit of (weak)  $\Gamma$ -structures is a (weak)  $\Gamma$ -structure. Conversely, each weak  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\mathbf{G}$  is equal to  $\varprojlim \mathbf{G}/N$ , where  $N$  ranges over all open normal subgroups of  $G$ .

Let  $(X, G)$  be a profinite transformation group. Recall [HJ, Section 1] that a **partition** of  $X$  is a finite collection  $Y = \{V_1, \dots, V_n\}$  of disjoint nonempty open-closed subsets of  $X$  such that  $X = V_1 \cup \dots \cup V_n$ . A partition  $Y'$  of  $X$  is **finer** than  $Y$  if for each  $V' \in Y'$  there is  $V \in Y$  such that  $V' \subseteq V$ . Call  $Y$  a  **$G$ -partition** if in addition for each  $\sigma \in G$  and each  $i$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq n$ , there exists  $j$ ,  $1 \leq j \leq n$ , such that  $V_i^\sigma = V_j$ .

**LEMMA 1.3:** *Every (weak)  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\mathbf{G}$  is an inverse limit of finite (weak)  $\Gamma$ -structures which are epimorphic images of  $\mathbf{G}$ .*

*Proof:* By the above remarks we may assume that the group  $G$  is finite. Let  $\mathcal{P}$  be the family of  $G$ -partitions  $Y$  of  $X(\mathbf{G})$  which



(4a) are finer than  $\{d^{-1}(\psi) \mid \psi \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)\}$  (hence  $d_Y(U) = d(x)$  for  $U \in Y$  and  $x \in U$  defines a continuous map  $d_Y: Y \rightarrow \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$ ); and

(4b) if  $\mathbf{G}$  is a  $\Gamma$ -structure, then  $U^\tau \cap U = \emptyset$  for all  $U \in Y$  and  $\tau \in G - \{1\}$ .

Each  $Y \in \mathcal{P}$  defines a finite (weak)  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\mathbf{G}_Y = \langle G, Y, d_Y \rangle$ . If  $Y'$  is finer than  $Y$ , then the map  $U' \mapsto U$  for  $U \in Y, U' \in Y'$  and  $U' \subseteq U$  gives a canonical epimorphism  $\mathbf{G}_{Y'} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}_Y$ . Moreover, the map  $x \mapsto U$ , for  $U \in Y$  and  $x \in U$  defines an epimorphism  $\mathbf{G} \rightarrow \varprojlim \mathbf{G}_Y$ . Since both  $X$  and  $\varprojlim Y$  are compact and Hausdorff it suffices to prove that this map is injective. In other words, for distinct  $x_1, x_2 \in X$  show that there exists  $Y \in \mathcal{P}$  such that  $d_Y(x_1) \neq d_Y(x_2)$ .

Indeed, let  $V$  be an open-closed neighborhood of  $x_1$  such that  $x_2 \notin V$ . Let  $Y'$  be a  $G$ -partition of  $X$  finer than  $\{V, X - V\}$  [HJ, Lemma 1.4]. If  $\mathbf{G}$  is not a  $\Gamma$ -structure let  $Y = \{V \cap d^{-1}(\psi), (X - V) \cap d^{-1}(\psi) \mid \psi \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)\}$ . If  $\mathbf{G}$  is a  $\Gamma$ -structure, then each  $x \in X$  has an open-closed neighborhood  $U_x$  such that  $x^\tau \notin U_x$  for each  $\tau \in G - \{1\}$ . Replace  $U_x$  by  $d^{-1}(d(x)) \cap V \cap U_x - \bigcup_{\tau \in G - \{1\}} U_x^\tau$ , if necessary, to assume that  $U_x \subseteq V \cap d^{-1}(d(x))$  and  $U_x^\tau \cap U_x = \emptyset$  for each  $\tau \in G - \{1\}$ . Since  $X$  is compact, finitely many of these neighborhoods cover  $X$ . Then there exists a partition  $Y_0$  of  $X$  such that for each  $U \in Y_0$  and  $x \in X$  either  $U \subseteq U_x$  or  $U \cap U_x = \emptyset$ . Finally use [HJ, Lemma 1.4] to choose a  $G$ -partition  $Y$  of  $X$ , finer than  $Y_0$ . Then  $Y \in \mathcal{P}$ . In each case  $d_Y(x) \neq d_Y(x')$ . ■

LEMMA 1.4: Each weak  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\mathbf{G}$  with an injective forgetful map is an inverse limit of finite weak  $\Gamma$ -structures with injective forgetful maps which are epimorphic images of  $\mathbf{G}$ .

Proof: For each open normal subgroup  $N$  of  $G$  let  $\eta_N: G \rightarrow G/N$  be the canonical map. The finite weak  $\Gamma$ -structure

$$\mathbf{G}_N = \langle G/N, \{\eta_N \circ d(x) \mid x \in X(\mathbf{G})\}, \text{inclusion} \rangle$$

is obviously an epimorphic image of  $G$ . If  $x, y \in X(\mathbf{G})$  and  $x \neq y$ , then  $d(x) \neq d(y)$ . Hence there exists  $N$  such that  $\eta_N \circ d(x) \neq \eta_N \circ d(y)$ . It follows that  $\mathbf{G} = \varprojlim \mathbf{G}_N$ .

■

## 2. Basic properties of $\Gamma$ -structures.

A crucial ingredient in our construction is the existence of fibred products in the category of  $\Gamma$ -structures. Let  $\alpha_1: \mathbf{B}_1 \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$  and  $\alpha_2: \mathbf{B}_2 \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$  be morphisms of weak  $\Gamma$ -structures. Consider the fibred products  $B_1 \times_A B_2$  and  $X(\mathbf{B}_1) \times_{X(\mathbf{A})} X(\mathbf{B}_2)$ . For  $i = 1, 2$  let  $\pi_i: B_1 \times_A B_2 \rightarrow B_i$  and  $\pi_i: X(\mathbf{B}_1) \times_{X(\mathbf{A})} X(\mathbf{B}_2) \rightarrow X(\mathbf{B}_i)$  be the projection maps. For each  $(x_1, x_2) \in X(\mathbf{B}_1) \times_{X(\mathbf{A})} X(\mathbf{B}_2)$ , we have  $\alpha_1(d(x_1)) = d(\alpha_1(x_1)) = d(\alpha_2(x_2)) = \alpha_2(d(x_2))$ . Hence there exists a unique homomorphism  $\hat{d}(x_1, x_2): \Gamma \rightarrow B_1 \times_A B_2$  such that the following diagram is commutative

$$\begin{array}{ccc}
 & \Gamma & \\
 & \downarrow \hat{d}(x_1, x_2) & \\
 d(x_1) \swarrow & B_1 \times_A B_2 & \searrow d(x_2) \\
 \pi_1 \swarrow & & \searrow \pi_2 \\
 B_1 & & B_2 \\
 \alpha_1 \swarrow & & \searrow \alpha_2 \\
 & A &
 \end{array}$$

Check that the map  $\hat{d}: X(\mathbf{B}_1) \times_{X(\mathbf{A})} X(\mathbf{B}_2) \rightarrow \text{Hom}(\Gamma, B_1 \times_A B_2)$  defined in this way is continuous. Further let  $B_1 \times_A B_2$  operate on  $X(\mathbf{B}_1) \times_{X(\mathbf{A})} X(\mathbf{B}_2)$  componentwise and verify condition (1) of Section 1 for  $\hat{d}$  to conclude that  $\mathbf{B}_1 \times_{\mathbf{A}} \mathbf{B}_2 = \langle B_1 \times_A B_2, X(\mathbf{B}_1) \times_{X(\mathbf{A})} X(\mathbf{B}_2), \hat{d} \rangle$  is a weak  $\Gamma$ -structure. We call it the **fibred product** of  $\mathbf{B}_1$  and  $\mathbf{B}_2$  over  $\mathbf{A}$ . The coordinate projection  $\pi_i: \mathbf{B}_1 \times_{\mathbf{A}} \mathbf{B}_2 \rightarrow \mathbf{B}_i$ , is a morphism,  $i = 1, 2$ . If both  $\mathbf{B}_1$  and  $\mathbf{B}_2$  are  $\Gamma$ -structures, so is  $\mathbf{B}_1 \times_{\mathbf{A}} \mathbf{B}_2$ . If the forgetful maps of both  $\mathbf{B}_1$  and  $\mathbf{B}_2$  are injective so is the forgetful map of  $\mathbf{B}_1 \times_{\mathbf{A}} \mathbf{B}_2$ .

The proof of the following characterization of fibred products is standard (e.g., [HL, Lemma 1.1]). It is left to the reader.

LEMMA 2.1: Consider a commutative diagram of weak  $\Gamma$ -structures.

$$(1) \quad \begin{array}{ccc}
 \mathbf{B} & \xrightarrow{\beta_2} & \mathbf{B}_2 \\
 \beta_1 \downarrow & & \downarrow \alpha_2 \\
 \mathbf{B}_1 & \xrightarrow{\alpha_1} & \mathbf{A}
 \end{array}$$

The following statements are equivalent:

- (a)  $\mathbf{B}$  is isomorphic to the fibred product  $\mathbf{B}_1 \times_{\mathbf{A}} \mathbf{B}_2$  (i.e., there is an isomorphism  $\beta: \mathbf{B} \rightarrow \mathbf{B}_1 \times_{\mathbf{A}} \mathbf{B}_2$  such that  $\beta_1 \circ \beta^{-1}$  and  $\beta_2 \circ \beta^{-1}$  are the coordinate projections);
- (b) for each pair of morphisms  $\psi_i: \mathbf{C} \rightarrow \mathbf{B}_i$ ,  $i = 1, 2$ , of weak  $\Gamma$ -structures such that  $\alpha_1 \circ \psi_1 = \alpha_2 \circ \psi_2$  there is a unique morphism  $\psi: \mathbf{C} \rightarrow \mathbf{B}$  such that  $\beta_i \circ \psi = \psi_i$ ,  $i = 1, 2$ ; and
- (c) **1.** for each  $\sigma_i \in B_i$ ,  $i = 1, 2$ , such that  $\alpha_1(\sigma_1) = \alpha_2(\sigma_2)$  there exists a unique  $\sigma \in B$  such that  $\beta_i(\sigma) = \sigma_i$ ,  $i = 1, 2$ ; and **2.** for each  $x_i \in X(\mathbf{B}_i)$ ,  $i = 1, 2$ , such that  $\alpha_1(x_1) = \alpha_2(x_2)$  there exists a unique  $x \in X(\mathbf{B})$ , such that  $\beta_i(x) = x_i$ ,  $i = 1, 2$ .

We call a diagram (1) a **cartesian square** if it satisfies one of the equivalent conditions of Lemma 2.1.

LEMMA 2.2: If in the cartesian square (1)  $\mathbf{A}$  is a  $\Gamma$ -structure and  $\alpha_2$  is a cover, then so is  $\beta_1$ .

*Proof:* Let  $x, x' \in X(\mathbf{B})$  and  $\beta_1(x) = \beta_1(x')$ . Then  $\alpha_2(\beta_2(x)) = \alpha_2(\beta_2(x'))$ . Hence there exists  $\sigma_2 \in B_2$  such that  $\beta_2(x)^{\sigma_2} = \beta_2(x')$ . Therefore  $\alpha_2(\beta_2(x))^{\alpha_2(\sigma_2)} = \alpha_2(\beta_2(x')) = \alpha_2(\beta_2(x))$ . Since  $\mathbf{A}$  is a  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\alpha_2(\sigma_2) = 1$ . Conclude that there exists  $\sigma \in B$  such that  $\beta_2(\sigma) = \sigma_2$  and  $\beta_1(\sigma) = 1$ . Thus  $\beta_2(x^\sigma) = \beta_2(x')$  and  $\beta_1(x^\sigma) = \beta_1(x')$ . From Lemma 2.1(c)  $x^\sigma = x'$ . It follows that  $\beta_1$  is a cover.  $\blacksquare$

LEMMA 2.3: Let  $\beta_1: \mathbf{B} \rightarrow \mathbf{B}_1$  be an epimorphism of  $\Gamma$ -structures and let  $K$  be a closed normal subgroup of  $B$  such that  $K \cap \text{Ker}(\beta_1) = 1$ . Let  $\beta_2: \mathbf{B} \rightarrow \mathbf{B}/K$  and  $\alpha_1: \mathbf{B}_1 \rightarrow \mathbf{B}_1/\beta_1(K)$  be the quotient maps. Denote the unique epimorphism such that  $\alpha_1 \circ \beta_1 = \alpha_2 \circ \beta_2$  by  $\alpha_2: \mathbf{B}/K \rightarrow \mathbf{B}_1/\beta_1(K)$ . Then the following diagram is a cartesian square

$$(2) \quad \begin{array}{ccc} \mathbf{B} & \xrightarrow{\beta_2} & \mathbf{B}/K \\ \beta_1 \downarrow & & \downarrow \alpha_2 \\ \mathbf{B} & \xrightarrow{\alpha_1} & \mathbf{B}_1/\beta_1(K) \end{array}$$

*Proof:* We leave the proof of 1. of Lemma 2.1(c) to the reader and prove 2. of Lemma 2.1(c). To prove the existence let  $x_1 \in X(\mathbf{B}_1)$  and  $x_2 \in X(\mathbf{B})/K$  with  $\alpha_1(x_1) = \alpha_2(x_2)$ .

There exists  $x \in X(\mathbf{B})$  such that  $\beta_2(x) = x_2$ . Since  $\alpha_1(x_1) = \alpha_2(\beta_2(x)) = \alpha_1(\beta_1(x))$ , there exists  $\sigma \in K$  such that  $x_1 = \beta_1(x)^{\beta_1(\sigma)} = \beta_1(x^\sigma)$ . Finally  $x_2 = \beta_2(x) = \beta_2(x^\sigma)$ .

For the uniqueness consider  $x, x' \in X(\mathbf{B})$  that satisfy  $\beta_i(x') = \beta_i(x)$ ,  $i = 1, 2$ . There exists  $\tau \in K$ , such that  $x' = x^\tau$ . Hence  $\beta_1(x) = \beta_1(x') = \beta_1(x)^{\beta_1(\tau)}$ . Since  $\mathbf{B}_1$  is a  $\Gamma$ -structure,  $\beta_1(\tau) = 1$ . Conclude from  $K \cap \text{Ker}(\beta_1) = 1$  that  $\tau = 1$ . Hence  $x' = x$ .

■

Let  $(X, G)$  be a profinite transformation group. A subset  $X_0$  of  $X$  is a **system of representatives** for the  $G$ -orbits of  $X$ , if for each  $x \in X$  there exist  $x_0 \in X_0$  and  $\sigma \in G$  such that  $x = x_0^\sigma$ , and if  $x_0, x_1 \in X_0$ ,  $\sigma \in G$  and  $x_0^\sigma = x_1$  imply  $x_0 = x_1$ .

LEMMA 2.4: Let  $G$  be a profinite group that acts regularly (Definition 1.1) (and continuously) on a Boolean space  $X$ . Then

- (a) the quotient map  $\pi: X \rightarrow X/G$  has a continuous section; and
- (b)  $X$  has a closed system  $X_0$  of representatives for the  $G$ -orbits.

*Proof:* Note that assertions (a) and (b) are equivalent. Indeed, if  $\lambda: X/G \rightarrow X$  is a continuous section of  $\pi$ , then  $X_0 = \lambda(X/G)$  satisfies (b). If (b) holds, then the restriction of  $\pi$  to  $X_0$  is a homeomorphism onto  $X/G$ . Its inverse is a continuous section of  $\pi$ .

We first prove (b) for  $G$  finite. Regularity implies that each  $x \in X$  has an open-closed neighborhood  $U_x$  such that  $x^\sigma \notin U_x$  for each  $\sigma \in G$ ,  $\sigma \neq 1$ . Replace  $U_x$  by  $U_x - \bigcup_{\sigma \neq 1} U_x^\sigma$ , if necessary, to assume that  $U_x \cap U_x^\sigma = \emptyset$  for each  $\sigma \neq 1$ . Since  $X$  is compact, a finite collection of such sets, say  $U_1, \dots, U_n$ , covers  $X$ . Then

$$X_0 = \bigcup_{j=1}^n [U_j - (\bigcup_{i=1}^{j-1} \bigcup_{\sigma \in G} U_i^\sigma)]$$

is a closed system of representatives for the  $G$ -orbits of  $X$ . Indeed, for  $x \in X$  let  $j$  be the smallest positive integer for which there exists  $\sigma \in G$  such that  $x^\sigma \in U_j$ . Then  $x^\sigma \in X_0$  represents  $x$ . Also if  $x_0, x_1 \in X_0$  and  $x_0^\sigma = x_1$  for some  $\sigma \in G$ , then there exists  $j$ ,  $1 \leq j \leq n$ , such that  $x_0, x_1 \in U_j$ . Hence  $\sigma = 1$ . From the preceding paragraph (a) is also true.

Now we prove (a) in the general case. Let  $\mathcal{L}$  be the collection of all pairs  $(L, \lambda)$ , where  $L$  is a closed normal subgroup of  $G$  and  $\lambda$  is a continuous section of the quotient

map  $\pi_{L,G}: X/L \rightarrow X/G$ . Partially order  $\mathcal{L}$  by defining  $(L', \lambda') \geq (L, \lambda)$  if  $L' \leq L$  and  $\pi_{L',L} \circ \lambda' = \lambda$ . By Zorn's Lemma  $\mathcal{L}$  has a maximal element  $(L, \lambda)$ . If  $L \neq 1$ , then  $L$  has a proper open subgroup  $L'$  which is normal in  $G$ . Since  $L/L'$  is finite  $\pi_{L',L}: X/L' \rightarrow X/L$  has a continuous section, say  $\theta$ . Then  $(L', \theta \circ \lambda) \in \mathcal{L}$  and  $(L', \theta \circ \lambda) > (L, \lambda)$ , a contradiction. Thus  $L = 1$  and (a) holds. ■

**COROLLARY 2.5:** *Let  $\alpha: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$  be a cover of  $\Gamma$ -structures. Then  $\alpha: X(\mathbf{G}) \rightarrow X(\mathbf{A})$  has a continuous section, and  $X(\mathbf{G})$  has a closed system of representatives for its  $G$ -orbits.*

*Proof:* We may assume that  $\alpha$  is the quotient map  $X(\mathbf{G}) \rightarrow X(\mathbf{G})/\text{Ker}(\alpha)$ . Now apply Lemma 2.4. ■

**LEMMA 2.6:** *Let  $X$  be a Boolean space,  $A$  a profinite group and  $d_0: X \rightarrow \text{Hom}(\Gamma, A)$  a continuous map. Then there exists a  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\mathbf{A} = \langle A, X \times A, d \rangle$  such that  $X$  is a closed system of representatives for the  $A$ -orbits of  $X(\mathbf{A}) = X \times A$  and  $\text{Res}_X d = d_0$ .*

*Proof:* Define the action of  $A$  on the Boolean space  $X \times A$  by  $(x, a)^{a'} = (x, aa')$ . Then the map  $d: X \times A \rightarrow \text{Hom}(\Gamma, A)$  defined by  $d(x, a) = d_0(x)^a$  is continuous and  $\mathbf{A} = \langle A, X \times A, d \rangle$  is a  $\Gamma$ -structure. Finally identify  $X$  with  $X \times 1$  to find that  $X$  is a closed system of representatives for the  $A$ -orbits of  $X \times A$  and  $\text{Res}_X d = d_0$ . ■

The following lemma asserts that the  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\mathbf{A}$  of Lemma 2.6 is unique up to an isomorphism.

**LEMMA 2.7:** *Let  $\mathbf{A}$  be a weak  $\Gamma$ -structure, let  $\mathbf{B}$  be a  $\Gamma$ -structure, and let  $X$  a closed system of representatives of the  $B$ -orbits of  $X(\mathbf{B})$ . Also, let  $\alpha_0: B \rightarrow A$  be a continuous homomorphism and  $\alpha'_1: X \rightarrow X(\mathbf{A})$  a continuous map such that  $d(\alpha'_1(x)) = \alpha_0 \circ d(x)$  for each  $x \in X$ . Then  $\alpha'_1$  uniquely extends to a map  $\alpha_1: X(\mathbf{B}) \rightarrow X(\mathbf{A})$  such that  $\alpha = (\alpha_0, \alpha_1): \mathbf{B} \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$  is a morphism of weak  $\Gamma$ -structures.*

Moreover,  $\alpha$  is an epimorphism if and only if  $\alpha_0$  is an epimorphism and  $\alpha'_1(X)$  contains a representative of each  $A$ -orbit of  $X(\mathbf{A})$ .

If  $\mathbf{A}$  is a  $\Gamma$ -structure, then  $\alpha$  is a cover if and only if  $\alpha_0$  is an epimorphism,  $\alpha'_1$  is injective and  $\alpha'_1(X)$  is a system of representatives of the  $A$ -orbits of  $X(\mathbf{A})$ .

*Proof:* The map  $(x, \sigma) \mapsto x^\sigma$ ,  $x \in X$  and  $\sigma \in B$ , gives an isomorphism of transformation groups  $(X(\mathbf{B}), B) \cong (X \times B, B)$ , where  $B$  acts on  $X \times B$  by multiplication from the right on the second factor. Define the map  $\alpha_1: X(\mathbf{B}) \rightarrow X(\mathbf{A})$  by  $\alpha_1(x^\sigma) = \alpha'_1(x)^{\alpha_0(\sigma)}$ . It extends  $\alpha'_1$  and  $\alpha: \mathbf{B} \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$  is a morphism of weak  $\Gamma$ -structures. The rest of the lemma follows from Definitions 1.1 and 1.2. ■

The following lemma shows that each finite weak  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\mathbf{A}$  has a unique minimal cover  $\hat{\mathbf{A}}$  which is a finite  $\Gamma$ -structure.

LEMMA 2.8: Let  $\mathbf{A} = \langle A, X, d \rangle$  be a finite weak  $\Gamma$ -structure. Then there exists a finite  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\hat{\mathbf{A}} = \langle A, \hat{X}, \hat{d} \rangle$  and a cover  $\pi: \hat{\mathbf{A}} \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$  such that for every (epi)morphism  $\alpha: \mathbf{B} \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$  from a  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\mathbf{B}$  there exists an (epi)morphism  $\hat{\alpha}: \mathbf{B} \rightarrow \hat{\mathbf{A}}$  such that  $\pi \circ \hat{\alpha} = \alpha$ .

*Proof:* Let  $X_0$  be a system of representatives for the  $A$ -orbits of  $X$ . Since  $X_0$  is finite, Lemma 2.6 gives a  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\hat{\mathbf{A}} = \langle A, \hat{X}, \hat{d} \rangle$  such that  $\hat{X} \cong X_0 \times A$ ,  $X_0$  is a closed system of representatives for the  $A$ -orbits of  $\hat{X}$  and  $\hat{d}(x_0) = d(x_0)$  for each  $x_0 \in X_0$ . The map  $\text{id}: A \rightarrow A$  and the map  $X_0 \times A \rightarrow X$  given by  $(x_0, \sigma) \mapsto x_0^\sigma$ , for  $x_0 \in X_0$  and  $\sigma \in A$  define a cover  $\pi: \hat{\mathbf{A}} \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$  (Lemma 2.7). In particular  $d(\pi(x)) = \hat{d}(x)$  for each  $x \in \hat{X}$ .

Let now  $\mathbf{B}$  be a  $\Gamma$ -structure and  $\alpha: \mathbf{B} \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$  a morphism. By Corollary 2.5,  $X(\mathbf{B})$  has a closed system  $Y_0$  of representatives for its  $B$ -orbits. Choose a map  $\rho: \alpha(Y_0) \rightarrow \hat{X}$  such that  $\pi(\rho(x)) = x$  for each  $x \in \alpha(Y_0)$ . Since  $\alpha(Y_0)$  is finite,  $\rho$  is continuous. Denote the restriction of  $\alpha: X(\mathbf{B}) \rightarrow X(\mathbf{A})$  to  $Y_0$  by  $\alpha'_1$  and let  $\hat{\alpha}'_1 = \rho \circ \alpha'_1$ . Then  $\hat{d}(\hat{\alpha}'_1(y_0)) = \alpha \circ d(y_0)$  for each  $y_0 \in Y_0$ . By Lemma 2.7,  $\alpha'_1: Y_0 \rightarrow X$  and  $\alpha: B \rightarrow A$  extend to a morphism  $\hat{\alpha}: \mathbf{B} \rightarrow \hat{\mathbf{A}}$  such that  $\pi \circ \hat{\alpha} = \alpha$ . ■

### 3. The $\Gamma$ -structure $\Gamma_{e,m}$ .

For integers  $0 \leq e \leq m$  take  $e$  copies  $\Gamma_1, \dots, \Gamma_e$  of  $\Gamma$ . Let

$$(1) \quad \Gamma_{e,m} = \Gamma_1 * \dots * \Gamma_e * \widehat{F}_{m-e}$$

be the free product (in the category of profinite groups) of  $\Gamma_1, \dots, \Gamma_e$  and the free profinite group  $\widehat{F}_{m-e}$  of rank  $m - e$ . We view  $\Gamma_1, \dots, \Gamma_e$  and  $\widehat{F}_{m-e}$  as closed subgroups of  $\Gamma_{e,m}$ . Each  $(e + 1)$ -tuple  $(\gamma_1, \dots, \gamma_e, \gamma_{e+1})$  of homomorphisms of  $\Gamma_1, \dots, \Gamma_e, \widehat{F}_{m-e}$ , respectively, into a profinite group  $G$  uniquely extends to a homomorphism  $\gamma: \Gamma_{e,m} \rightarrow G$ . The results about projectivity obtained in Sections 4 and 5 depend on the following assumptions on  $\Gamma$  and  $\Gamma_{e,m}$ .

ASSUMPTION 3.1: The profinite group  $\Gamma$  satisfies the following conditions:

- (a)  $\Gamma$  is finitely generated and nontrivial.
- (b) The center of  $\Gamma$  is trivial.
- (c) Suppose that closed subgroups  $H, H'$  of  $\Gamma_{e,m}$  are isomorphic to  $\Gamma$ . Then
  - (c1)  $H$  is conjugate to one of the groups  $\Gamma_1, \dots, \Gamma_e$ ;
  - (c2) if  $\sigma \in \Gamma_{e,m}$  satisfies  $H^\sigma = H$ , then  $\sigma \in H$ ; and
  - (c3) if  $H' \neq H$ , then  $H' \cap H = 1$ .
- (d)  $\Gamma$  has a finite quotient  $\bar{\Gamma}$  with the following property: if a closed subgroup  $H$  of  $\Gamma_{e,m}$  is a quotient of  $\Gamma$  and has  $\bar{\Gamma}$  as a quotient, then  $H \cong \Gamma$  (hence, by (c),  $H$  is conjugate to one of the subgroups  $\Gamma_1, \dots, \Gamma_e$ ).

DEFINITION 3.2: We call a quotient  $H$  of  $\Gamma$  **large** if  $\bar{\Gamma}$  is a quotient of  $H$ . Assumption 3.1(d) says that any closed subgroup of  $\Gamma_{e,m}$  which is a large quotient of  $\Gamma$  is isomorphic to  $\Gamma$ .

LEMMA 3.3: The subgroups  $\Gamma_1, \dots, \Gamma_e$  of  $\Gamma_{e,m}$  are mutually nonconjugate. The centralizer of  $\Gamma_i$  in  $\Gamma_{e,m}$ , is trivial,  $i = 1, \dots, e$ .

*Proof:* The identity maps  $\Gamma_i \rightarrow \Gamma_i$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, e$  and the trivial map  $\widehat{F}_{m-e} \rightarrow 1$  give a homomorphism  $\varphi$  of  $\Gamma_{e,m}$  onto the direct product  $\Gamma_1 \times \dots \times \Gamma_e$ . Since  $\Gamma \neq 1$  (Assumption 3.1(a)),  $\Gamma_1, \dots, \Gamma_e$  are mutually nonconjugate as subgroups of  $\Gamma_1 \times \dots \times \Gamma_e$ . Hence they

are mutually nonconjugate as subgroups of  $\Gamma_{e,m}$ . The assertion about the centralizer follows from 3.1(b) and 3.1(c2). ■

REMARK 3.4: Assumption 3.1(c) does not hold for arbitrary  $\Gamma$ . For example, let  $\Gamma = \mathbb{Z}_p$ ,  $e = m = 2$ . Then  $\Gamma_{2,2}$  is the free product of subgroups  $\langle a \rangle$  and  $\langle b \rangle$ , each isomorphic to  $\mathbb{Z}_p$ . Consider the map  $\alpha: \Gamma_{2,2} \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}_p \times \mathbb{Z}_p$  defined by  $a \mapsto (1, 0)$  and  $b \mapsto (0, 1)$ . Then  $\alpha(ab) = (1, 1)$  generates a group isomorphic to  $\mathbb{Z}_p$  but conjugate to none of the components of  $\mathbb{Z}_p \times \mathbb{Z}_p$ . Hence, the subgroup  $\langle ab \rangle$  of  $\Gamma_{2,2}$  contains a subgroup which is isomorphic to  $\mathbb{Z}_p$  but conjugate to neither  $\langle a \rangle$  nor  $\langle b \rangle$ . Thus Assumption 3.1(c1) is not fulfilled. Herfort and Ribes [Thm. B' of HR] prove Assumptions 3.1(c2) and 3.1(c3) for arbitrary  $\Gamma$  by group theoretic methods. We however verify Assumption 3.1 for  $\Gamma \cong G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ , the only case we need, by field theoretic methods (Proposition 12.10). ■

LEMMA 3.5: Let  $0 \leq e \leq m$  be integers. In the above notation choose for each  $i$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq m$ , an isomorphism  $\psi_i: \Gamma \rightarrow \Gamma_i$ . Let  $X = \{\psi_i^\sigma \mid i = 1, \dots, e; \sigma \in \Gamma_{e,m}\}$  and let  $d: X \rightarrow \text{Hom}(\Gamma, \Gamma_{e,m})$  be the inclusion map. Then

(a)  $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{e,m} = \langle \Gamma_{e,m}, X, d \rangle$  is a  $\Gamma$ -structure (Definition 1.1);

(b) the elements of  $X$  are embeddings of  $\Gamma$  into  $\Gamma_{e,m}$ ;

(c)

$$\begin{aligned} \{D(x) \mid x \in X\} &= \{\Gamma_i^\sigma \mid i = 1, \dots, e; \sigma \in \Gamma_{e,m}\} \\ &= \{H \leq \Gamma_{e,m} \mid H \text{ is a large quotient of } \Gamma\}; \end{aligned}$$

and

(d) for  $x, y \in X$ ,  $D(x) = D(y)$  if and only if there exists  $\sigma \in D(x)$  such that  $y = x^\sigma$ ; if  $D(x) \neq D(y)$  then  $D(x) \cap D(y) = 1$ .

*Proof:* To prove (a) it suffices to check the regularity of the action of  $\Gamma_{e,m}$  on  $X$ . Indeed, if  $\psi_i^\sigma = \psi_i$  for some  $i$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq n$  and  $\sigma \in \Gamma_{e,m}$ , then  $\sigma$  belongs to the centralizer of  $\Gamma_i$  in  $\Gamma_{e,m}$ . Therefore Assumptions 3.1(c2) and 3.1(b) imply that  $\sigma = 1$ . Assertion (c) follows from Assumption 3.1(d). Finally assertion (d) is a combination of (c), Assumption 3.1(c2) and Assumption 3.1(d). ■

COROLLARY 3.6: Let  $\mathbf{B}$  be a finite weak  $\Gamma$ -structure. Then, for suitable  $0 \leq e \leq m$ ,



there exists a cover  $\beta: \Gamma_{e,m} \rightarrow \mathbf{B}$ .

*Proof:* Let  $x_1, \dots, x_e$  represent the  $B$ -orbits of  $X(\mathbf{B})$  and let  $m = e + \text{rank}(B)$ . Define an epimorphism  $\beta: \Gamma_{e,m} \rightarrow B$  such that its restriction to  $\Gamma_i$  is  $d(x_i) \circ \psi_i^{-1}$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, e$  (in the notation of Lemma 3.5) and its restriction to  $\widehat{F}_{m-e}$  maps this group onto  $B$ . Now define a surjective map  $\beta: X \rightarrow X(\mathbf{B})$  by  $\beta(\psi_i^\sigma) = x_i^{\beta(\sigma)}$ , for  $\sigma \in \Gamma_{e,m}$  and  $i = 1, \dots, e$ . Then  $\beta: \Gamma_{e,m} \rightarrow \mathbf{B}$  is a cover (Definition 1.2).  $\blacksquare$

#### 4. $\Gamma$ -projective groups.

Let  $G$  be a profinite group. A **conjugacy domain** of subgroups of  $G$  is a collection of closed subgroups of  $G$  which is closed under conjugation by elements of  $G$ . In particular, the collection of all subgroups of  $G$  which are isomorphic to  $\Gamma$  is a conjugacy domain. We denote it by  $\mathcal{D}(G)$ . Since  $\Gamma$  is finitely generated each  $\psi \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  with  $\psi(\Gamma) \in \mathcal{D}(G)$  is an embedding [R, p. 69]. We say that a conjugacy domain of subgroups of  $G$  is **closed** if it is a closed subset of the Boolean space  $\text{Subg}(G)$  (Section 1).

DEFINITION 4.1: Let  $\mathcal{D}$  be a closed conjugacy domain of subgroups of a profinite group  $G$  which are isomorphic to  $\Gamma$ . A  $\mathcal{D}$ -embedding problem for  $G$  is a diagram

$$(1) \quad \begin{array}{ccc} & & G \\ & & \downarrow \varphi \\ B & \xrightarrow{\alpha} & A \end{array}$$

(abbreviated " $(\varphi, \alpha)$ "), where  $\alpha$  is an epimorphism of profinite groups,  $\varphi$  is a homomorphism and for each  $H \in \mathcal{D}$  there exists a homomorphism  $\gamma_H: H \rightarrow B$  such that  $\alpha \circ \gamma_H = \text{Res}_H \varphi$ . The problem is **finite** if  $B$  is a finite group. A **solution** to (1) is a homomorphism  $\gamma: G \rightarrow B$  such that  $\alpha \circ \gamma = \varphi$ . We say that  $G$  is  **$\mathcal{D}$ -projective** if every finite  $\mathcal{D}$ -embedding problem for  $G$  is solvable.

We say that  $G$  is  **$\Gamma$ -projective** if  $\mathcal{D}(G)$  is topologically closed in  $\text{Subg}(G)$  and if  $G$  is  $\mathcal{D}(G)$ -projective. In this case we refer to a  $\mathcal{D}(G)$ -embedding problem also as a  **$\Gamma$ -embedding problem**.

The condition on  $G$  to be  $\mathcal{D}$ -projective may be considered as a local-global principle. Thus (1) is solvable if for each  $H \in \mathcal{D}$  the local problem associated to  $H$  is solvable.

REMARK 4.2: Note that if  $X$  is a subset of  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  such that  $\{\psi(\Gamma) \mid \psi \in X\} = \mathcal{D}$ , then each  $\psi \in X$  is an embedding. Thus (1) is a  $\mathcal{D}$ -embedding problem if and only if for each  $\psi \in X$  there exists  $\rho \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, B)$  such that  $\alpha \circ \rho = \varphi \circ \psi$ . ■

EXAMPLE 4.3: For each  $e$  and  $m$ ,  $1 \leq e \leq m$ ,  $\Gamma_{e,m}$  is a  $\Gamma$ -projective group. Indeed let (1) with  $G = \Gamma_{e,m}$  be a finite embedding problem for  $\Gamma_{e,m}$ . Then for each  $i$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq e$ , there exists a homomorphism  $\gamma_i: \Gamma_i \rightarrow B$  such that  $\alpha \circ \gamma_i = \text{Res}_{\Gamma_i} \varphi$ . Also, as a free profinite group  $\widehat{F}_{m-e}$  is projective. Therefore there exists a homomorphism  $\gamma_{e+1}: \widehat{F}_{m-e} \rightarrow B$  such that  $\alpha \circ \gamma_{e+1}$  is the restriction of  $\varphi$  to  $\widehat{F}_{m-e}$ . Combine  $\gamma_1, \dots, \gamma_{e+1}$  to a solution  $\gamma$  of (1). ■

LEMMA 4.4: In the notation of Definition 4.1, if  $G$  is  $\mathcal{D}$ -projective, then every  $\mathcal{D}$ -embedding problem (1) in which  $A$  is finite and  $\text{rank}(B) \leq \aleph_0$  [J3, Sec.1] has a solution. *Proof:* There exists a descending sequence  $\text{Ker}(\alpha) = N_0 \geq N_1 \geq N_2 \geq \dots$  of open normal subgroups of  $B$  with a trivial intersection. Identify  $A$  with  $B/N_0$  and let  $\varphi_0 = \varphi$  and  $\alpha_0 = \alpha$ . For each  $i$  and  $j$ ,  $j \geq i \geq 0$ , let  $\alpha_i: B \rightarrow B/N_i$  and  $\alpha_{ji}: B/N_j \rightarrow B/N_i$  be the quotient maps.

*Claim:* Let  $i \geq 0$  and let  $\varphi_i: G \rightarrow B/N_i$  be a homomorphism such that  $(\varphi_i, \alpha_i)$  is a  $\mathcal{D}$ -embedding problem for  $G$ . Then there exists  $\varphi_{i+1} \in \text{Hom}(G, B/N_{i+1})$  such that  $\alpha_{i+1,i} \circ \varphi_{i+1} = \varphi_i$  and  $(\varphi_{i+1}, \alpha_{i+1})$  is a  $\mathcal{D}$ -embedding problem for  $G$ .

Use the claim to inductively construct  $\varphi_{i+1} \in \text{Hom}(G, B/N_{i+1})$  such that  $\alpha_{i+1,i} \circ \varphi_{i+1} = \varphi_i$ . The maps  $\varphi_i$  define  $\gamma \in \text{Hom}(G, B)$  such that  $\alpha \circ \gamma = \varphi$ .

Without loss prove the claim for  $i = 0$ . For each  $j$  the pair  $(\varphi, \alpha_{j0})$  is a  $\mathcal{D}$ -embedding problem for  $G$ . For each  $\beta \in \text{Hom}(G, B/N_j)$  let  $\beta \circ \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G) = \{\beta \circ \psi \mid \psi \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)\}$ . It is a subset of the finite set  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, B/N_j)$ . Thus, since  $G$  is  $\mathcal{D}$ -projective, the finite collection of sets

$$\mathcal{Z}_j = \{\beta \circ \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G) \mid \beta \in \text{Hom}(G, B/N_j), \alpha_{j0} \circ \beta = \varphi\}$$

is nonempty. The map  $\beta \circ \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G) \mapsto \alpha_{j+1,j} \circ \beta \circ \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  maps  $\mathcal{Z}_{j+1}$  into  $\mathcal{Z}_j$ . It follows that  $\varprojlim \mathcal{Z}_j \neq \emptyset$ , i.e., there exist homomorphisms  $\beta_j: G \rightarrow B/N_j$  such that  $\alpha_{j0} \circ \beta_j = \varphi$  and

$$(2) \quad \alpha_{j+1,j} \circ \beta_{j+1} \circ \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G) = \beta_j \circ \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G), \quad j = 0, 1, 2, \dots$$

In particular  $\alpha_{j_0} \circ \beta_1 = \varphi$ . Apply Remark 4.2 to show that  $(\beta_1, \alpha_1)$  is a  $\mathcal{D}$ -embedding problem for  $G$ . Indeed, let  $\psi_1 \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  and use (2) to inductively construct  $\psi_j \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  such that  $\alpha_{j+1, j} \circ \beta_{j+1} \circ \psi_{j+1} = \beta_j \circ \psi_j$ ,  $j = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ . The maps  $\beta_j \circ \psi_j: \Gamma \rightarrow B/N_j$  define  $\rho \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, B)$  such that  $\alpha_1 \circ \rho = \beta_1 \circ \psi_1$ . This concludes the proof of the claim for  $i = 0$ . ■

LEMMA 4.5: In the notation of Definition 4.1 suppose that  $G$  is a  $\mathcal{D}$ -projective group. Then

- (a) if  $H_1 \leq G$  is a large quotient of  $\Gamma$  (Definition 3.2), then  $H_1 \in \mathcal{D}$ ; therefore  $\mathcal{D} = \mathcal{D}(G)$ ,  $G$  is  $\Gamma$ -projective and  $\mathcal{D}(G)$  is topologically closed in  $\text{Subg}(G)$ ;
- (b) if  $H, H' \in \mathcal{D}$  and  $H \neq H'$ , then  $H \cap H' = 1$ ; and
- (c) if  $H_2 \in \mathcal{D}$  and  $\sigma \in G$  satisfies  $H_2^\sigma = H_2$ , then  $\sigma \in H_2$ .

Proof: Let  $H_1 \leq G$  be a large quotient of  $\Gamma$ , let  $H, H', H_2 \in \mathcal{D}$  and let  $\sigma \in G$  such that  $H \neq H'$  and  $H_2^\sigma = H_2$ . Since  $\mathcal{D}$  is closed in  $\text{Subg}(G) = \varprojlim \text{Subg}(G/N)$ , where  $N$  ranges over all open normal subgroups of  $G$ , there is  $N$  such that, with  $A = G/N$ , the quotient map  $\varphi: G \rightarrow A$  satisfies

- (3a)  $\varphi(H_1), \varphi(H), \varphi(H')$  and  $\varphi(H_2)$  are large quotients of  $\Gamma$ ;
- (3b)  $\varphi(H_1) \notin \varphi(\mathcal{D})$  if  $H_1 \notin \mathcal{D}$ ;
- (3c)  $\varphi(H) \neq \varphi(H')$ ; and
- (3d)  $\varphi(\sigma) \notin \varphi(H_2)$  if  $\sigma \notin H_2$ .

Let  $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_e$  be a listing of all  $\alpha \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, A)$  such that  $\alpha(\Gamma) \in \varphi(\mathcal{D})$ . With  $\Gamma_1 = \dots = \Gamma_e = \Gamma$  the maps  $\alpha_i: \Gamma_i \rightarrow A$  together with a suitable epimorphism  $\alpha_{e+1}: \widehat{F}_{m-e} \rightarrow A$  (for some  $m \geq e$ ) define an epimorphism  $\alpha$  of  $\Gamma_{e,m} = \Gamma_1 * \dots * \Gamma_e * \widehat{F}_{m-e}$  onto  $A$  such that  $(\varphi, \alpha)$  is a  $\mathcal{D}$ -embedding problem. By Lemma 4.4 there exists a homomorphism  $\gamma: G \rightarrow \Gamma_{e,m}$  such that  $\alpha \circ \gamma = \varphi$ .

From (3a) and Assumption 3.1(d),  $\gamma(H_1), \gamma(H), \gamma(H')$  and  $\gamma(H_2)$  are isomorphic to  $\Gamma$ . By Assumption 3.1(c1), each of the groups  $\gamma(H_1), \gamma(H), \gamma(H')$ , and  $\gamma(H_2)$  is conjugate to some  $\Gamma_i$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, e$ . Therefore  $\varphi(H_1) \in \varphi(\mathcal{D})$ . Conclude from (3b) that  $H_1 \in \mathcal{D}$ . This proves (a).

From (3c),  $\gamma(H) \neq \gamma(H')$ . By Assumption 3.1(c3),  $\gamma(H) \cap \gamma(H') = 1$ . Now note that since  $\gamma(H) \cong H \cong \Gamma$ , the restriction of  $\gamma$  to  $H$  is injective. Therefore  $H \cap H' = 1$ .

Finally observe for (c) that since  $\gamma(H_2)^{\gamma(\sigma)} = \gamma(H_2)$ , Assumption 3.1(c2) implies that  $\gamma(\sigma) \in \gamma(H_2)$ . Hence  $\varphi(\sigma) \in \varphi(H_2)$ . Conclude from (3d) that  $\sigma \in H_2$ . ■

REMARK 4.6: The group  $\text{Aut}(\Gamma)$  of all automorphisms of  $\Gamma$  is profinite [Sm, Thm. 1.3]. It acts on  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  by the following rule:

$$\psi^\omega = \psi \circ \omega, \quad \psi \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G), \text{ and } \omega \in \text{Aut}(\Gamma).$$

Note that the actions of  $\text{Aut}(\Gamma)$  and  $G$  on  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  commute. Also, let  $\psi, \psi' \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$ .

- (a) If  $\psi(\Gamma) = \psi'(\Gamma)$  and  $\psi$  is an embedding, then there exists  $\omega \in \text{Aut}(\Gamma)$  such that  $\psi' = \psi^\omega$ .
- (b) For  $g \in \Gamma$  let  $[g]$  be the inner automorphism of  $\Gamma$  determined by  $g$ . Then  $\psi^{[g]} = \psi^{\psi(g)}$ . Thus there exists  $g \in \Gamma$  such that  $\psi' = \psi^{[g]}$  if and only if there exists  $\sigma \in \psi(\Gamma)$  such that  $\psi' = \psi^\sigma$ .

LEMMA 4.7: Suppose that a profinite group  $G$  is  $\Gamma$ -projective. Then there exists a closed subset  $X$  of  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$ , closed under the action of  $G$ , such that  $\{\psi(\Gamma) \mid \psi \in X\} = \mathcal{D}(G)$  and for each  $\psi, \psi' \in X$ ,

- (4)  $\psi(\Gamma) = \psi'(\Gamma)$  if and only if there exists  $\sigma \in \psi(\Gamma)$  such that  $\psi' = \psi^\sigma$ .

*Proof:* The set  $Y = \{\psi \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G) \mid \psi(\Gamma) \in \mathcal{D}(G)\}$  is closed under the actions of  $G$  and  $\text{Aut}(\Gamma)$  on  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$ . By Lemma 4.5(a) the collection  $\mathcal{D}(G)$  is topologically closed in  $\text{Subg}(G)$ . Since  $\text{Im}: \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G) \rightarrow \text{Subg}(G)$  is continuous (beginning of Section 1),  $Y$  is topologically closed in  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$ . The quotient space  $Y/G$  is Boolean [HJ, Section 1]. Since the actions of  $G$  and  $\text{Aut}(\Gamma)$  on  $Y$  commute,  $\text{Aut}(\Gamma)$  acts on  $Y/G$ . By Remark 4.6(b), the group of inner automorphisms  $\text{Inn}(\Gamma)$  of  $\Gamma$ , acts trivially on  $Y/G$ . Hence  $\text{Aut}(\Gamma)/\text{Inn}(\Gamma)$  acts on  $Y/G$ . We claim that this action is regular (Definition 1.1). Indeed, if for  $\psi \in Y$ ,  $\omega \in \text{Aut}(\Gamma)$  and  $\sigma \in G$  we have  $\psi^\omega = \psi^\sigma$ , then  $\psi(\Gamma) = \psi(\Gamma)^\sigma$ . Hence  $\sigma \in \psi(\Gamma)$  (Lemma 4.5(c)). Thus  $\sigma = \psi(g)$ , with  $g \in \Gamma$ . By Remark 4.6(b),  $\psi^\omega = \psi^{[g]}$ . But since  $\psi$  is an embedding,  $\omega = [g]$ , which proves our claim.

By Lemma 2.4(b) there exists a closed system of representatives  $\overline{X}$  for the  $\text{Aut}(\Gamma)/\text{Inn}(\Gamma)$ -orbits of  $Y/G$ . Let  $X$  be the preimage of  $\overline{X}$  under the map  $Y \rightarrow Y/G$ . Then  $\{\psi(\Gamma) \mid \psi \in X\} = \mathcal{D}(G)$ . If  $\psi, \psi' \in X$  and  $\psi(\Gamma) = \psi'(\Gamma)$ , then there exists  $\omega \in \text{Aut}(\Gamma)$  such that  $\psi' = \psi^\omega$  (Remark 4.6(a)). By the definition of  $X$  there exists  $\sigma \in G$  such that  $\psi' = \psi^\sigma$ . Lemma 4.5(c) implies that  $\sigma \in \psi(\Gamma)$ . The converse implication of (4) is trivial.  $\blacksquare$

LEMMA 4.8: Suppose that  $G$  is a  $\Gamma$ -projective profinite group. Let  $X$  be as in Lemma 4.7 and let  $\mathbf{G} = \langle G, X, \text{inclusion} \rangle$  be the corresponding weak  $\Gamma$ -structure. Consider an epimorphism  $\alpha: \mathbf{B} \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$  of finite weak  $\Gamma$ -structures, a morphism  $\varphi: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$  and an open normal subgroup  $N_0$  of  $G$ . Then there exists a commutative diagram

$$(5) \quad \begin{array}{ccc} & & \mathbf{G} \\ & & \downarrow \hat{\varphi} \\ \widehat{\mathbf{B}} & \xrightarrow{\hat{\alpha}} & \widehat{\mathbf{A}} \\ \pi' \downarrow & & \downarrow \pi \\ \widehat{\mathbf{B}} & \xrightarrow{\alpha} & \widehat{\mathbf{A}} \end{array} \quad \varphi$$

in which  $\hat{\alpha}$  is an epimorphism of weak  $\Gamma$ -structures with injective forgetful maps (inclusion, for simplicity), such that  $\text{Ker}(\hat{\varphi}) \leq N_0$ ;

- (a) for each  $\lambda \in X(\widehat{\mathbf{B}})$ ,  $\text{Ker}(\hat{\alpha}) \cap \lambda(\Gamma) = 1$  (i.e., the restriction of  $\hat{\alpha}$  to  $\lambda(\Gamma)$  is injective);
- (b) if  $\rho, \rho' \in X(\widehat{\mathbf{A}})$  and there exists  $\omega \in \text{Aut}(\Gamma)$  such that  $\rho' = \rho^\omega$ , then there exists  $g \in \Gamma$  such that  $\pi \circ \rho' = \pi \circ \rho^{[g]}$ ; and
- (c) for each  $\psi \in X$  the group  $\hat{\varphi}(\psi(\Gamma))$  is a large quotient of  $\Gamma$  (Definition 3.2).

*Proof:* By Corollary 3.6 there exists an epimorphism  $\beta: \underline{\Gamma}_{e,m} \rightarrow \mathbf{B}$  for suitable  $e, m$ . Since the forgetful map of  $\underline{\Gamma}_{e,m}$  is injective,  $\beta$  induces an epimorphism  $\bar{\beta}$  of a finite weak  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\mathbf{B}_1$  with an injective forgetful map onto  $\mathbf{B}$  (Lemma 1.4). Replace  $\mathbf{B}$  by  $\mathbf{B}_1$  and  $\alpha$  by  $\alpha \circ \bar{\beta}$ , if necessary, to assume that the forgetful map of  $\mathbf{B}$  is injective.

Let  $N$  be an open normal subgroup of  $G$  which is contained in  $N_0 \cap \text{Ker}(\varphi)$  and denote the quotient map  $G \rightarrow G/N$  by  $\hat{\varphi}$ . Then  $\widehat{\mathbf{A}} = \mathbf{G}_N = \langle G/N, \{\hat{\varphi} \circ \psi \mid \psi \in X\}, \text{inclusion} \rangle$  is a finite weak  $\Gamma$ -structure. Lemma 1.4 implies that if  $N$  is sufficiently small, then the map  $G/N \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$  defined by  $\varphi$  can be completed to a morphism  $\pi: \widehat{\mathbf{A}} \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$

such that  $\varphi = \pi \circ \hat{\varphi}$ . With  $\hat{\mathbf{B}} = \mathbf{B} \times_{\mathbf{A}} \hat{\mathbf{A}}$  (Section 2), we obtain a commutative diagram (5). Since the injective maps of both  $\mathbf{B}$  and  $\hat{\mathbf{A}}$  are injective so is the injective map of  $\hat{\mathbf{B}}$  (Section 2). Our aim now is to choose  $N$  sufficiently small such that (a), (b) and (c) hold.

To achieve (a) let  $\Delta$  be the intersection of all  $\text{Ker}(\lambda)$  with  $\lambda \in X(\hat{\mathbf{B}})$ . Since  $\Gamma$  is finitely generated,  $\Delta$  is an open normal subgroup of  $\Gamma$ . For each open normal subgroup  $M$  of  $G$  let  $Z(M) = \{\psi \in X \mid \psi^{-1}(M) \leq \Delta\}$ . If  $\psi \in Z(M)$  and  $\psi' \in X$  coincides with  $\psi$  modulo  $M$ , then  $\psi' \in Z(M)$ . Thus  $Z(M)$  is open in  $X$ . For each  $\psi \in X$  there exists  $M$  such that  $\psi(\Gamma) \cap M \leq \psi(\Delta)$ . Since  $\psi$  is an embedding,  $\psi^{-1}(M) \leq \Delta$  and therefore  $\psi \in Z(M)$ . Thus the collection of all  $Z(M)$ 's covers  $X$ . By compactness there exist open normal subgroups  $M_1, \dots, M_m$  of  $G$  such that  $X = Z(M_1) \cup \dots \cup Z(M_m)$ . Choose  $N \leq M_1 \cap \dots \cap M_m$ . Then  $\text{Ker}(\hat{\varphi} \circ \psi) = \psi^{-1}(N) \leq \Delta \leq \text{Ker}(\lambda)$  for every  $\psi \in X$  and  $\lambda \in X(\hat{\mathbf{B}})$ . Now, for each  $\lambda \in X(\hat{\mathbf{B}})$ ,  $\hat{\alpha} \circ \lambda$  is an element of  $X(\hat{\mathbf{A}})$ . Thus there exists  $\psi \in X$  such that  $\hat{\alpha} \circ \lambda = \hat{\varphi} \circ \psi$ . Conclude that  $\text{Ker}(\hat{\alpha} \circ \lambda) \leq \text{Ker}(\pi' \circ \lambda)$ , i.e.,  $\pi'(\lambda(\Gamma) \cap \text{Ker}(\hat{\alpha})) = 1$ . Hence, by Lemma 2.1(c) 1. we get that  $\text{Ker}(\hat{\alpha}) \cap \lambda(\Gamma) = 1$ .

To achieve (b) let  $Y_1, \dots, Y_n$  be the distinct  $\text{Inn}(\Gamma)$ -orbits of  $X(\mathbf{A})$ . Then  $X_i = \varphi^{-1}(Y_i) = \{\psi \in X \mid \varphi \circ \psi \in Y_i\}$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, n$ , are open-closed subsets of  $X$ . If  $\psi_i \in X_i$  and  $\psi_j \in X_j$ , for  $i \neq j$ , then  $\psi_i$  and  $\psi_j$  are not in the same  $\text{Inn}(\Gamma)$ -orbit. From Remark 4.6(b) there exists no  $\sigma \in \psi_i(\Gamma)$  such that  $\psi_j = \psi_i^\sigma$ . Hence by (4),  $\psi_i(\Gamma) \neq \psi_j(\Gamma)$  and therefore  $\psi_i$  and  $\psi_j$  are not in the same  $\text{Aut}(\Gamma)$ -orbit. That is, the closed subsets  $\psi_i^{\text{Aut}(\Gamma)}$  and  $\psi_j^{\text{Aut}(\Gamma)}$  of  $X$  are disjoint. Hence, if  $N$  is sufficiently small,  $\hat{\varphi} \circ \psi_i^{\text{Aut}(\Gamma)}$  is disjoint from  $\hat{\varphi} \circ \psi_j^{\text{Aut}(\Gamma)}$ . Obviously, if  $\psi'_i$  and  $\psi'_j$  coincide with  $\psi_i$  and  $\psi_j$ , respectively, modulo  $N$ , then  $\hat{\varphi} \circ \psi'_i{}^{\text{Aut}(\Gamma)}$  is disjoint from  $\hat{\varphi} \circ \psi'_j{}^{\text{Aut}(\Gamma)}$ . Use the compactness of  $X_i \times X_j$  to find an  $N$  such that  $\hat{\varphi} \circ \psi_i^{\text{Aut}(\Gamma)} \cap \hat{\varphi} \circ \psi_j^{\text{Aut}(\Gamma)} = \emptyset$  for all  $i \neq j$  and each  $\psi_i \in X_i$  and  $\psi_j \in X_j$ .

If  $\rho, \rho' \in X(\hat{\mathbf{A}})$  and  $\rho' = \rho^\omega$  for some  $\omega \in \text{Aut}(\Gamma)$ , then there exists  $\psi, \psi' \in X$  such that  $\rho = \hat{\varphi} \circ \psi$  and  $\rho' = \hat{\varphi} \circ \psi'$ . By the choice of  $N$ ,  $\psi$  and  $\psi'$  lie in the same  $X_i$ . Hence  $\pi \circ \rho = \varphi \circ \psi$  and  $\pi \circ \rho' = \varphi \circ \psi'$  belong to the same  $Y_i$ . Conclude that there exists  $g \in \Gamma$  such that  $\pi \circ \rho' = \pi \circ \rho^{[g]}$ . This proves (b).

Finally, to achieve (c), note that for each  $\psi \in X$  the group  $\psi(\Gamma)$  is isomorphic to

$\Gamma$ . Therefore  $\hat{\varphi}(\psi(\Gamma))$  is a large quotient of  $\Gamma$  if  $N$  is sufficiently small. The same holds for  $\psi' \in X$  if  $\hat{\varphi} \circ \psi' = \hat{\varphi} \circ \psi$ , i.e., if  $\psi'$  lies near  $\psi$ . Use the compactness of  $X$  to choose  $N$  such that  $\hat{\varphi}(\psi(\Gamma))$  is a large quotient of  $\Gamma$  for each  $\psi \in X$ . ■

## 5. Projective $\Gamma$ -structures.

We define projective  $\Gamma$ -structure and prove that the underlying group of each of them is  $\Gamma$ -projective. Conversely we show that the  $\Gamma$ -structure associated in Lemma 4.8 with a  $\Gamma$ -projective group is projective.

DEFINITION 5.1: Let  $\mathbf{G}$  be a  $\Gamma$ -structure. A diagram

$$(1) \quad \begin{array}{ccc} & & \mathbf{G} \\ & & \downarrow \varphi \\ \mathbf{B} & \xrightarrow{\alpha} & \mathbf{A} \end{array}$$

(abbreviated by " $(\varphi, \alpha)$ ") where  $\varphi$  is a morphism and  $\alpha$  is an epimorphism of weak  $\Gamma$ -structures is called a **weak embedding problem** for  $\mathbf{G}$ . If  $\mathbf{A}$  and  $\mathbf{B}$  are  $\Gamma$ -structures and  $\alpha$  is a cover, we call  $(\varphi, \alpha)$  an **embedding problem** for  $\mathbf{G}$ . The problem is **finite** if  $\mathbf{B}$  is finite. A **solution** to  $(\varphi, \alpha)$  is a morphism  $\gamma: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{B}$  such that  $\alpha \circ \gamma = \varphi$ . The structure  $\mathbf{G}$  is **projective** if every finite weak embedding problem for  $\mathbf{G}$  has a solution.

LEMMA 5.2: If  $\mathbf{G}$  is a projective  $\Gamma$ -structure, then every embedding problem for  $\mathbf{G}$  has a solution.

*Proof:* Consider embedding problem (1) for  $\mathbf{G}$ . Let  $K = \text{Ker}(\alpha)$  and assume without loss that  $\mathbf{A} = \mathbf{B}/K$  and  $\alpha$  is the quotient map (Section 1). Divide the rest of the proof into two parts.

PART A:  $K$  is finite. Then there exists an open normal subgroup  $N_0$  of  $B$  such that  $N_0 \cap K = 1$ . By Lemma 1.3 there exists an epimorphism  $\beta$  of  $\mathbf{B}$  onto a finite  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\mathbf{B}_0$  such that  $\text{Ker}(\beta) \leq N_0$ . Now use Lemma 2.3 to construct a cartesian diagram of epimorphisms of  $\Gamma$ -structures

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathbf{B} & \xrightarrow{\alpha} & \mathbf{A} \\ \beta \downarrow & & \downarrow \alpha_1 \\ \mathbf{B}_0 & \xrightarrow{\alpha_0} & \mathbf{A}_0 \end{array}$$

in which  $\alpha_0$  is a cover. By assumption there exists a morphism  $\gamma_0: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{B}_0$  such that  $\alpha_0 \circ \gamma_0 = \alpha_1 \circ \varphi$ . Thus, Lemma 2.1(b) gives a morphism  $\gamma: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{B}$  such that  $\alpha \circ \gamma = \varphi$ .

PART B: *The general case.* Let  $\Lambda$  be the family of pairs  $(L, \lambda)$ , where  $L$  is a closed normal subgroup of  $B$  contained in  $K$  and  $\lambda: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{B}/L$  is a morphism such that

$$\begin{array}{ccc} & \mathbf{G} & \\ \lambda \swarrow & & \downarrow \varphi \\ \mathbf{B}/L & \xrightarrow{\alpha_L} & \mathbf{B}/K \end{array}$$

commutes ( $\alpha_L$  is the cover induced by  $L \leq K$ ). Partially order  $\Lambda$  by letting  $(L', \lambda') \geq (L, \lambda)$  mean that  $L' \leq L$  and

(2)

$$\begin{array}{ccc} & & G \\ & \swarrow \lambda' & \searrow \lambda \\ \mathbf{B}/L' & \xrightarrow{\quad} & \mathbf{B}/L \end{array}$$

commutes. Then  $\Lambda$  is inductive and by Zorn's Lemma it has a maximal element  $(L, \lambda)$ . If  $L \neq 1$ , there is an open normal subgroup  $N$  in  $B$  such that  $L \not\leq N$ ; hence  $L' = N \cap L$  is a proper open normal subgroup of  $L$ . Since  $L/L'$  is finite Part A gives a morphism  $\lambda': \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{B}/L'$  such that (2) commutes. Then  $(L', \lambda') \in \Lambda$  and  $(L', \lambda') > (L, \lambda)$ , a contradiction. Conclude that  $L = 1$ , as required. ■

LEMMA 5.3: *Each projective  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\mathbf{G}$  has the following properties.*

- (a) the forgetful map  $d: X(\mathbf{G}) \rightarrow \text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$  is injective;
- (b) for each  $x \in X(\mathbf{G})$  the map  $d(x): \Gamma \rightarrow G$  is injective (therefore  $D(x) \cong \Gamma$ );
- (c) if  $H \leq G$  is a large quotient of  $\Gamma$  (Definition 3.2), then  $H \cong \Gamma$  and there exists  $x \in X(\mathbf{G})$  such that  $D(x) = H$  (Definition 1.1);
- (d) if  $x, y \in X(\mathbf{G})$ , then  $D(x) = D(y)$  if and only if there exists  $\sigma \in D(x)$  such that  $y = x^\sigma$ ; if  $D(x) \neq D(y)$ , then  $D(x) \cap D(y) = 1$ ; and
- (e) the set  $\mathcal{D}(G) = \{H \leq G \mid H \cong \Gamma\}$  is closed in  $\text{Subg}(G)$  and possesses a closed system of representatives for the conjugacy classes.



*Proof:* Let  $\varphi$  be an epimorphism of  $\mathbf{G}$  onto a finite  $\Gamma$ -structure  $\mathbf{A}$ . By Corollary 3.6 there exists a cover  $\alpha: \underline{\Gamma}_{e,m} \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$ , for some  $e$  and  $m$ ,  $0 \leq e \leq m$ . Since  $\mathbf{G}$  is projective, there exists a morphism  $\gamma: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \underline{\Gamma}_{e,m}$  such that  $\alpha \circ \gamma = \varphi$ . Recall that  $\mathbf{G}$  is the inverse limit of finite  $\Gamma$ -structures (Lemma 1.3). Since  $\underline{\Gamma}_{e,m}$  has properties (a)-(e) above (Lemma 3.5), a suitable choice of  $\mathbf{A}$  will imply these properties for  $\mathbf{G}$ .

*Proof of (a):* Suppose that  $x, x' \in X(\mathbf{G})$  and  $x \neq x'$ . Choose  $\varphi$  such that  $\varphi(x) \neq \varphi(x')$ . Then  $\gamma(x) \neq \gamma(x')$ . Hence  $d(\gamma(x)) \neq d(\gamma(x'))$ . It follows that  $\gamma(d(x)) \neq \gamma(d(x'))$ . Therefore  $d(x) \neq d(x')$ .

*Proof of (b):* The right hand side of  $\gamma \circ d(x) = d(\gamma(x))$  is injective. Hence  $d(x)$  is injective.

*Proof of (c):* Choose  $A$  such that  $\varphi(H)$  is a large quotient of  $\Gamma$ . Then  $\gamma(H)$  is a large quotient of  $\Gamma$ . It follows that  $\gamma(H) \cong \Gamma$ . Since  $H$  is also a quotient of  $\Gamma$ ,  $H \cong \Gamma$  [R, p. 69]. Now the map  $D: X(\mathbf{G}) \rightarrow \text{Subg}(\mathbf{G})$  is continuous (Section 1). Since  $X(\mathbf{G})$  is compact,  $\{D(x) \mid x \in X(\mathbf{G})\}$  is closed in  $\text{Subg}(\mathbf{G})$  and it is the inverse limit of  $\{D(a) \mid a \in X(\mathbf{A})\}$ , where  $\mathbf{A}$  ranges over all finite quotients of  $\mathbf{G}$ . If  $H \neq D(x)$  for all  $x \in X(\mathbf{G})$ , then we may choose  $\mathbf{A}$  such that  $\varphi(H) \neq D(a)$  for all  $a \in X(\mathbf{A})$ . Therefore  $\gamma(H) \neq D(y)$  for all  $y \in X(\underline{\Gamma}_{e,m})$ . Since  $\gamma(H) \cong \Gamma$ , this is impossible.

*Proof of (d):* Obviously, if  $y = x^\sigma$  with  $\sigma \in D(x)$ , then  $D(x) = D(y)$ . Conversely if  $D(x) = D(y)$ , then  $D(\gamma(x)) = D(\gamma(y))$ . Hence  $\gamma(x)$  and  $\gamma(y)$  lie in the same  $\Gamma_{e,m}$ -orbit. Therefore  $\varphi(x)$  and  $\varphi(y)$  lie in the same  $A$ -orbit. Since this holds for each  $\mathbf{A}$  and since the  $G$ -orbit of  $x$  is closed,  $x$  and  $y$  lie in the same  $G$ -orbit. Finally suppose that  $D(x) \neq D(y)$ . Choose  $\mathbf{A}$  such that  $D(\varphi(x)) \neq D(\varphi(y))$ . Then  $D(\gamma(x)) \neq D(\gamma(y))$ . Hence  $\gamma(D(x)) \cap \gamma(D(y)) = 1$ . Since the restriction of  $\gamma$  to  $D(x)$  is injective (by (b)),  $D(x) \cap D(y) = 1$ .

*Proof of (e):* By (b) and (c),  $\mathcal{D}(G) = \{D(x) \mid x \in X(\mathbf{G})\}$ . Hence  $\mathcal{D}(G)$  is closed in  $\text{Subg}(\mathbf{G})$ . Now let  $X_0$  be a closed system of representatives for the  $G$ -orbits of  $X(\mathbf{G})$  (Corollary 2.5). Then (d) implies that  $\{D(x) \mid x \in X_0\}$  is a closed system of representatives for the conjugacy classes of  $\mathcal{D}(G)$ . ■

PROPOSITION 5.4: (a) If  $\mathbf{G}$  is a projective  $\Gamma$ -structure, then  $G$  is a  $\Gamma$ -projective group.

(b) Conversely, let  $G$  be a  $\Gamma$ -projective group. Then there exists a closed subset  $X$  of  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G)$ , closed under the action of  $G$  such that  $\mathcal{D}(G) = \{\psi(\Gamma) \mid \psi \in X\}$  and for all  $\psi, \psi' \in X$ ,  $\psi(\Gamma) = \psi'(\Gamma)$  if and only if there exists  $\sigma \in \psi(\Gamma)$  such that  $\psi^\sigma = \psi'$ . For each such  $X$ ,  $\mathbf{G} = \langle G, X, \text{inclusion} \rangle$  is a projective  $\Gamma$ -structure.

*Proof of (a):* From Lemma 5.3,  $\mathcal{D}(G)$  is topologically closed in  $\text{Subg}(G)$  and we may assume that the forgetful map of  $\mathbf{G}$  is an inclusion. Choose a closed system  $X_0$  of representatives for the  $G$ -orbits of  $X(\mathbf{G})$  (Corollary 2.5). As in (1) of Definition 4.1 let  $(\varphi, \alpha)$  be a finite  $\mathcal{D}(G)$ -embedding problem for  $G$ . Then  $\bar{Y}_0 = \{\varphi \circ \psi \mid \psi \in X_0\}$ , as a subset of  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, A)$ , is finite, and for each  $\bar{\rho} \in \bar{Y}_0$  we may choose  $\rho \in \text{Hom}(\Gamma, B)$  such that  $\alpha \circ \rho = \bar{\rho}$ . Let  $Y_0 = \{\rho \mid \bar{\rho} \in \bar{Y}_0\}$ . Define regular actions of  $A$  and  $B$  on  $\bar{Y}_0 \times A$  and  $Y_0 \times B$  by  $(\bar{\rho}, a)^{a'} = (\bar{\rho}, aa')$  and  $(\rho, b)^{b'} = (\rho, bb')$ , respectively. Define maps  $d_A: \bar{Y}_0 \times A \rightarrow \text{Hom}(\Gamma, A)$  and  $d_B: Y_0 \times B \rightarrow \text{Hom}(\Gamma, B)$  by  $d_A(\bar{\rho}, a) = \bar{\rho}^a$  and  $d_B(\rho, b) = \rho^b$ , respectively. Then  $\mathbf{A} = \langle A, \bar{Y}_0 \times A, d_A \rangle$  and  $\mathbf{B} = \langle B, Y_0 \times B, d_B \rangle$  are finite  $\Gamma$ -structures. Since  $(X(\mathbf{G}), G)$  and  $(X_0 \times G, G)$  are isomorphic as transformation groups, the map  $\psi^\sigma \mapsto (\varphi \circ \psi, \varphi(\sigma))$  for  $\psi \in X_0$  and  $\sigma \in G$  together with the homomorphism  $\varphi: G \rightarrow A$  is a morphism  $\varphi: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$ . Similarly the map  $(\rho, b) \mapsto (\bar{\rho}, \alpha(b))$  gives together with the homomorphism  $\alpha: B \rightarrow A$  an epimorphism  $\alpha: \mathbf{B} \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$ . Since  $\mathbf{G}$  is projective, there exists a morphism  $\gamma: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{B}$  such that  $\alpha \circ \gamma = \varphi$ . The underlying homomorphism  $\gamma: G \rightarrow B$  solves the  $\Gamma$ -embedding problem for  $G$ .

*Proof of (b):* The existence of  $X$  is the content of Lemma 4.7. So we only have to prove that  $\mathbf{G}$  is a projective  $\Gamma$ -structure. Note first that the action of  $G$  on  $X$  is regular. Indeed, suppose that  $\psi = \psi^\sigma$  for some  $\psi \in X$  and  $\sigma \in G$ . Since  $\psi(\Gamma) \in \mathcal{D}(G)$ , Lemma 4.5(c) implies that  $\sigma \in \psi(\Gamma)$ . But then  $\sigma$  belongs to the center of  $\psi(\Gamma) \cong \Gamma$ . Conclude from Assumption 3.1(b) that  $\sigma = 1$ . Thus  $\mathbf{G}$  is a  $\Gamma$ -structure.

To prove that  $\mathbf{G}$  is projective we solve each finite weak embedding problem  $(\varphi, \alpha)$  as in Definition 5.1. Replace  $\alpha: \mathbf{B} \rightarrow \mathbf{A}$  by  $\hat{\alpha}: \mathbf{B} \rightarrow \hat{\mathbf{A}}$  and  $\varphi$  by  $\hat{\varphi}$  of (5) of Lemma 4.8 to assume that the forgetful maps of  $\mathbf{A}$  and  $\mathbf{B}$  are embeddings and

(3) for each  $\lambda \in X(\mathbf{B})$ ,  $\alpha$  is injective on  $\lambda(\Gamma)$ .

Apply Lemma 4.8 again to obtain a commutative diagram (5) of finite weak  $\Gamma$ -structures with injective forgetful maps such that

- (4) for  $\rho, \rho' \in X(\widehat{A})$ , if there exists  $\omega \in \text{Aut}(\Gamma)$  such that  $\rho' = \rho^\omega$ , then there exists  $g \in \Gamma$  such that  $\pi \circ \rho' = \pi \circ \rho^{[g]}$ ; and
- (5)  $\hat{\varphi}(\psi(\Gamma))$  is a large quotient of  $\Gamma$  for each  $\psi \in X$ .

Choose for suitable  $e, m$  an epimorphism  $\hat{\beta}: \mathbf{\Gamma}_{e,m} \rightarrow \widehat{\mathbf{B}}$  (Corollary 3.6). Then  $(\hat{\varphi}, \hat{\alpha} \circ \hat{\beta})$  is a  $\Gamma$ -embedding problem for  $G$ . Indeed if  $H \in \mathcal{D}(G)$ , then there exists  $\psi \in X$  such that  $\psi(\Gamma) = H$ . Since  $\hat{\alpha} \circ \hat{\beta}: X(\mathbf{\Gamma}_{e,m}) \rightarrow X(\widehat{A})$  is surjective and  $\hat{\varphi} \circ \psi \in X(\widehat{A})$  there exists  $\delta \in X(\mathbf{\Gamma}_{e,m})$  such that  $\hat{\alpha} \circ \hat{\beta} \circ \delta = \hat{\varphi} \circ \psi$ . As  $\psi$  is injective, there is an isomorphism  $\theta: H \rightarrow \Gamma$  such that  $\psi \circ \theta = \text{id}$ . Thus  $\hat{\alpha} \circ \hat{\beta} \circ \delta \circ \theta = \text{Res}_H \hat{\varphi}$ . Now, since  $G$  is  $\Gamma$ -projective there exists  $\gamma' \in \text{Hom}(G, \mathbf{\Gamma}_{e,m})$  such that  $\hat{\alpha} \circ \hat{\beta} \circ \gamma' = \hat{\varphi}$  (Lemma 4.4). Let  $\hat{\gamma} = \hat{\beta} \circ \gamma'$  and  $\gamma = \pi' \circ \hat{\gamma}$ . To show that  $\gamma$  defines a solution to the embedding problem  $(\varphi, \alpha)$  of  $\Gamma$ -structures it suffices now to prove for each  $\psi \in X$  that  $\gamma \circ \psi \in X(\mathbf{B})$ .

Indeed, by (5),  $(\gamma' \circ \psi)(\Gamma)$  is a large quotient of  $\Gamma$ . Hence by Lemma 3.5(c) there exists  $\lambda' \in X(\mathbf{\Gamma}_{e,m})$  such that  $\lambda'(\Gamma) = (\gamma' \circ \psi)(\Gamma)$ . Moreover  $\lambda'$  and  $\gamma' \circ \psi$  are embeddings. Hence there exists  $\omega \in \text{Aut}(\Gamma)$  such that  $\gamma' \circ \psi = \lambda' \circ \omega$ . Both  $\hat{\alpha} \circ \hat{\beta} \circ \gamma' \circ \psi = \hat{\varphi} \circ \psi$  and  $\hat{\alpha} \circ \hat{\beta} \circ \lambda'$  belong to  $X(\widehat{A})$  and  $\hat{\alpha} \circ \hat{\beta} \circ \gamma' \circ \psi = \hat{\alpha} \circ \hat{\beta} \circ \lambda' \circ \omega$ . Thus (4) gives  $g \in \Gamma$  such that  $\pi \circ \hat{\alpha} \circ \hat{\beta} \circ \gamma' \circ \psi = \pi \circ \hat{\alpha} \circ \hat{\beta} \circ (\lambda')^{[g]}$ . Rewrite this as  $\alpha \circ \pi' \circ \hat{\beta} \circ \gamma' \circ \psi = \alpha \circ \pi' \circ \hat{\beta} \circ (\lambda')^{[g]}$ . Since  $\pi' \circ \hat{\beta} \circ (\lambda')^{[g]} \in X(\mathbf{B})$ , (3) implies that  $\alpha$  is injective on  $(\pi' \circ \hat{\beta} \circ \gamma' \circ \psi)(\Gamma) = (\pi' \circ \hat{\beta} \circ (\lambda')^{[g]})(\Gamma)$ . Hence  $\gamma \circ \psi = \pi' \circ \hat{\beta} \circ \gamma' \circ \psi = \pi' \circ \hat{\beta} \circ (\lambda')^{[g]} \in X(\mathbf{B})$ , as required.

■

**DEFINITION 5.5:** We call a morphism  $\varphi: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{H}$  of  $\Gamma$ -structures **rigid** if for each  $x \in X(\mathbf{G})$  we have  $\text{Ker}(d(x)) = \text{Ker}(d(\varphi(x)))$ . This condition is equivalent to  $\text{Ker}(\varphi) \cap D(x) = 1$  and also to “ $\varphi$  induces an isomorphism of  $D(x)$  onto  $D(\varphi(x))$ ”. It is satisfied if  $D(y) \cong \Gamma$  for each  $y \in X(\mathbf{H})$ . ■

**LEMMA 5.6:** Let  $\varphi: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{H}$  be a rigid morphism of  $\Gamma$ -structures. Then each open normal subgroup  $M$  of  $G$  contains an open normal subgroup  $K$  of  $G$  such that the induced morphism  $\hat{\varphi}: \mathbf{G}/K \rightarrow \mathbf{H}/\varphi(K)$  is rigid.

*Proof:* Let  $x \in X(\mathbf{G})$  and  $y = \varphi(x) \in X(\mathbf{H})$ . Denote the collection of all open normal subgroups  $N$  of  $G$  contained in  $M$  by  $\mathcal{N}$ . For each  $N \in \mathcal{N}$  let  $x_N \in X(\mathbf{G})/N$  and  $y_N \in X(\mathbf{H})/\varphi(N)$  be the respective images of  $x$  and  $y$ . Note that  $d(x_N)$  is the composed map  $\Gamma \xrightarrow{d(x)} G \rightarrow G/N$  and  $d(y_N)$  is the composed map  $\Gamma \xrightarrow{d(y)} H \rightarrow H/\varphi(N)$ . Therefore

$$\bigcap_{N \in \mathcal{N}} \text{Ker}(d(y_N)) = \text{Ker}(d(y)) = \text{Ker}(d(x)) \leq \text{Ker}(d(x_M)).$$

Since the latter group is open in  $\Gamma$  there exists  $N \in \mathcal{N}$  such that

$$(6) \quad \text{Ker}(d(y_N)) \leq \text{Ker}(d(x_M)).$$

As  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, G/M)$  and  $\text{Hom}(\Gamma, H/\varphi(N))$  are finite, there exists an open neighborhood  $U$  of  $x$  in  $X(\mathbf{G})$  such that for each  $x' \in U$  and  $y' = \varphi(x')$ ,  $d(x'_M) = d(x_M)$  and  $d(y'_N) = d(y_N)$ . Thus (6) holds also for  $x'$  and  $y'$ . Use the compactness of  $X(\mathbf{G})$  to assume that (6) holds for all  $x \in X(\mathbf{G})$ .

Let  $K = M \cap \varphi^{-1}(\varphi(N))$ . Then  $K \in \mathcal{N}$ ,  $N \subseteq K \subseteq \varphi^{-1}(\varphi(N))$  and  $\varphi(K) = \varphi(N)$ . Thus for each  $x \in X(\mathbf{G})$  and  $y = \varphi(x)$  we have  $y_K = y_N$ . By (6)

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Ker}(d(x_K)) &= d(x)^{-1}(K) = d(x)^{-1}(M) \cap d(x)^{-1}(\varphi^{-1}(\varphi(N))) \\ &= d(x)^{-1}(M) \cap d(y)^{-1}(\varphi(N)) = \text{Ker}(d(x_M)) \cap \text{Ker}(d(y_N)) = \text{Ker}(d(y_K)). \end{aligned}$$

This means that  $\bar{\varphi}: \mathbf{G}/K \rightarrow \mathbf{H}/\varphi(K)$  is rigid.  $\blacksquare$

**Part B. The  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure associated with Galois extension.**

For the rest of this work we fix a prime  $p$ . In Section 11 we characterize the  $p$ -adic closures of  $\mathbb{Q}$  as algebraic extensions of  $\mathbb{Q}$  whose absolute Galois groups are large quotients of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ . Since  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  is finitely generated we may speak about  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structures. To each field  $K$  of characteristic 0 we associate its absolute  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure  $\mathbf{G}(K)$ . The elements of the space of sites of  $\mathbf{G}(K)$  are essentially the  $p$ -adic closures of  $K$ . If  $L$  is a Galois extension of  $K$ , then the relative  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure  $\mathbf{G}(L/K)$  is the quotient structure  $\mathbf{G}(K)/G(L)$ . Most of Part B (Sections 7, 8, 9 and 10) is dedicated to describe the elements of the space of sites,  $X(L/K)$ , of  $\mathbf{G}(L/K)$  in terms of  $L/K$ . The orbit of each site in  $X(L/K)$  is uniquely determined by the following data: a field  $L_0$  between  $K$  and  $L$  (the decomposition field), a place  $\pi_0: L_0 \rightarrow \mathbb{Q}_p \cup \{\infty\}$  and a homomorphism  $\varphi_0: L_0^\times \rightarrow \varprojlim \mathbb{Q}_p^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^m$ . It satisfies the following conditions: the place  $\pi_0$  is trivial on  $\mathbb{Q}$ , it does not extend to a  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ -valued place of a proper extension of  $L_0$  in  $L$ , and  $\pi_0(u) \neq 0, \infty$  implies  $\pi_0(u) = \varphi_0(u)$ . In Section 12 we define pseudo  $p$ -adically closed fields and realize each  $\Gamma_{e,m}$  as the absolute Galois group of a pseudo  $p$ -adically closed field, algebraic over  $\mathbb{Q}$ . We combine this with the results of Section 11 to conclude that  $\Gamma = G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  satisfies Assumption 3.1.

**6.  $p$ -adically closed fields.**

A **valued field** is a pair  $(K, v)$ , where  $K$  is a field and  $v$  is a valuation of  $K$ . The valuation  $v$  is called  **$p$ -adic** if the residue field is  $\mathbb{F}_p$  and  $v(p)$  is the smallest positive element of the value group  $v(K^\times)$ . A field  $K$  which admits a  $p$ -adic valuation is **formally  $p$ -adic**; it must be of characteristic 0. As with formally real fields, the existence of a  $p$ -adic valuation can be expressed in terms of the field. The  $p$ -adic substitution for the square operator  $X^2$  is the **Kochen operator**

$$(1) \quad \gamma(X) = \frac{1}{p} \frac{X^p - X}{(X^p - X)^2 - 1}$$

LEMMA 6.1: If  $(K, v)$  is a  $p$ -adically valued field, then  $\gamma(x)$  is defined for each  $x \in K$  and  $v(\gamma(x)) \geq 0$ . Conversely, let  $K$  be a field of characteristic 0. If  $ap^{-1} \neq$

$f(\gamma(x_1), \dots, \gamma(x_n))$  for each  $a \in \mathbb{Z}$ ,  $a \neq 0$  relatively prime to  $p$ , for each polynomial  $f \in \mathbb{Z}[X_1, \dots, X_n]$  and each  $x_1, \dots, x_n \in K$ , then  $K$  is formally  $p$ -adic.

*Proof:* [PR, pp. 95 and 99]. ■

A  $p$ -adically valued field  $(K, v)$  which has no proper  $p$ -adically valued algebraic extension is  **$p$ -adically closed**. Zorn's Lemma implies that each  $p$ -adically valued field  $(K, v)$  has an algebraic extension  $(\overline{K}, \overline{v})$  which is  $p$ -adically closed. This is a  **$p$ -adic closure** of  $(K, v)$ . Its isomorphism type over  $K$  is determined by the following theorem of Macintyre [M].

**PROPOSITION 6.2:** Let  $(K, v)$  be a  $p$ -adically valued field. Two  $p$ -adic closures  $(L_1, v_1)$  and  $(L_2, v_2)$  of  $(K, v)$  are isomorphic over  $K$  if and only if for each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ ,  $L_1^n \cap K = L_2^n \cap K$ .

*Proof:* [PR, p. 57]. ■

The  $p$ -adically closed fields are characterized among all  $p$ -adically valued fields by the following result. Recall that a  **$\mathbb{Z}$ -group** is an ordered abelian group  $A$  with a smallest positive integer  $1$  such that  $(A : nA) = n$  for each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ .

**PROPOSITION 6.3:** Let  $(K, v)$  be a  $p$ -adically valued field. Then  $(K, v)$  is  $p$ -adically closed if and only if  $(K, v)$  is Henselian and  $v(K^\times)$  is a  $\mathbb{Z}$ -group. In particular, if  $(K, v)$  is  $p$ -adically closed, then  $v$  is the unique  $p$ -adic valuation of  $K$ .

*Proof:* [PR, pp. 34 and 37]. ■

Let  $(K, v)$  be a  $p$ -adically closed field. Using the uniqueness of  $v$  we also refer to  $K$  as  **$p$ -adically closed**.

**PROPOSITION 6.4:** Let  $(K, v)$  be a  $p$ -adically closed field that extends a  $p$ -adically valued field  $(K_0, v_0)$ .

- (a) If  $K_0$  is algebraically closed in  $K$ , then  $(K_0, v_0)$  is  $p$ -adically closed.
- (b) If  $(K_0, v_0)$  is  $p$ -adically closed, then  $K$  is an elementary extension of  $K_0$ .
- (c) Let  $V$  be an absolutely irreducible variety defined over  $K$ . A necessary and sufficient condition for  $v$  to extend to the function field of  $V$  is that  $V_{\text{sim}}(K) \neq \emptyset$  ( $V_{\text{sim}}(K)$  is the set of  $K$ -rational simple points of  $V$ ).

Proof: [PR, pp. 38, 86 and 145]. ■

The field  $\mathbb{Q}$  admits a unique  $p$ -adic valuation  $v_p$ . The  $p$ -adic closure of  $\mathbb{Q}$  coincides with its Henselization with respect to  $v_p$ . Hence it is unique up to isomorphism. We denote it by  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$  and consider  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$  as the algebraic part of the field  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  of  $p$ -adic numbers.

PROPOSITION 6.5:  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  is finitely generated and has a trivial center.

Proof: Jannsen and Wingberg [JW] and [W] give for  $p \neq 2$  a presentation of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  by 4 generators and relations. For  $p = 2$ , Diekert [Di] presents an open subgroup of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_2)$  of index 2 by 5 generators and relations. Thus  $G(\mathbb{Q}_2)$  is generated by at most 6 elements.

That  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  has trivial center follows from the basic results of local class field theory (e.g., [L, p. 7]). ■

For each field  $K$  of characteristic 0 let  $K_{\text{alg}} = \tilde{\mathbb{Q}} \cap K$ .

COROLLARY 6.6: Let  $K$  be a  $p$ -adically closed field. Then  $K_{\text{alg}} \cong \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$ ,  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}K = \tilde{K}$  and  $G(K) \cong G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ .

Proof: By Proposition 6.4,  $K_{\text{alg}}$  is  $p$ -adically closed. Since its unique  $p$ -adic valuation extends  $v_p$ ,  $K_{\text{alg}} \cong \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$ . Without loss identify  $K_{\text{alg}}$  with  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$ . By Proposition 6.5,  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  has for each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  only finitely many extensions of degree  $\leq n$  (see also [L2, p. 64]). Since  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  and  $K$  are elementary extension of  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$  (Proposition 6.4(b)),  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$  and  $K$  have for each  $n$  only finitely many extensions of degree  $\leq n$ . Moreover, each extension of  $K$  of degree  $\leq n$  is the compositum of  $K$  with an extension of  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$  of degree  $\leq n$ . Thus  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}K = \tilde{K}$ . It follows that  $G(K) \cong G(\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}) \cong G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ . ■

It is convenient to shift our point of view from  $p$ -adic valuations to the corresponding coarse valuations [PR, p. 25] or rather to their associated  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ -valued places. We do not distinguish between equivalent  $p$ -adic valuations (i.e.,  $p$ -adic valuations with the same valuation ring).

LEMMA 6.7: Let  $K$  be a field. There is a canonical bijection  $v \mapsto \pi_v$  between  $p$ -adic valuations  $v$  of  $K$  and places  $\pi: K \rightarrow \mathbb{Q}_p \cup \{\infty\}$ . A  $p$ -adically valued field  $(L, w)$  extends

$(K, v)$  if and only if  $(L, \pi_w)$  extends  $(K, \pi_v)$ .

*Proof:* Let  $v$  be a  $p$ -adic valuation of  $K$ , with a valuation ring  $O_v$ . Each element  $a \in O_v$  can be uniquely written as  $a = a_0 + b_1p$ , with  $0 \leq a_0 < p$  and  $b_1 \in O_v$ . Thus,  $a$  defines by induction a sequence  $a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots$  of integers between 0 and  $p - 1$  such that  $a \equiv a_0 + a_1p + \dots + a_n p^n \pmod{p^{n+1}O_v}$ ,  $m \in \mathbb{N}$ . This gives a homomorphism  $\pi_v: O_v \rightarrow \mathbb{Z}_p$ ,  $\pi_v(a) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n p^n$ , with  $\text{Ker}(\pi_v) = \bigcap_{n=1}^{\infty} p^n O_v$ . The local ring  $O_{\dot{v}}$  of  $O_v$  at  $\text{Ker}(\pi_v)$ , as an overring of a valuation ring, is a valuation ring. Hence  $\pi_v$  uniquely extends to a place  $\pi_v: K \rightarrow \mathbb{Q}_p \cup \{\infty\}$  with  $O_{\dot{v}}$  as the valuation ring. Obviously the restriction of  $\pi_v$  to  $\mathbb{Q}$  and hence to  $K_{\text{alg}}$  is an embedding into  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ . Observe that if  $v$  and  $v'$  are equivalent  $p$ -adic valuations, then  $\pi_v = \pi_{v'}$ .

Note that  $O_v = \{x \in O_{\dot{v}} \mid \pi_v(x) \in \mathbb{Z}_p\}$ . Indeed, if  $x$  belongs to the right hand side but  $x \notin O_v$ , then  $x^{-1} \in pO_v$ . Hence  $1 = \pi_v(x^{-1})\pi_v(x) \in p\mathbb{Z}_p$ , a contradiction. It follows that the map  $v \mapsto \pi_v$  is injective. We show that it is also surjective.

Let  $\pi: K \rightarrow \mathbb{Q}_p \cup \{\infty\}$  be a place with a valuation ring  $\dot{O}$ . Then  $O = \{x \in \dot{O} \mid \pi(x) \in \mathbb{Z}_p\}$  is a valuation ring with  $pO$  as the maximal ideal. Since  $\pi$  is the identity map on  $\mathbb{Q}$ , we have  $\text{Ker}(\text{Res}_O \pi) = \bigcap_{n=1}^{\infty} p^n O$ . Denote the corresponding valuation by  $v$ . Then  $O/pO \cong \mathbb{Z}_p/p\mathbb{Z}_p \cong \mathbb{F}_p$  and  $v(p)$  is the smallest positive integer of  $v(K^\times)$ . Thus  $v$  is a  $p$ -adic valuation. Moreover, each  $x \in O$  has for each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  a unique representation  $x \equiv x_0 + x_1p + \dots + x_n p^n \pmod{p^{n+1}O}$ , with  $0 \leq x_i < p$ ,  $i = 0, \dots, n$ . Hence  $\pi(x) \equiv \pi_v(x) \pmod{p^{n+1}\mathbb{Z}_p}$ ,  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ . Conclude that  $\pi$  coincides with  $\pi_v$  on  $O$  and therefore on the valuation ring  $O_{\dot{v}}$ . It follows that  $O = O_{\dot{v}}$  and  $\pi = \pi_v$ .

To prove the second assertion of the lemma check that  $K \cap O_w = O_v$  if and only if  $K \cap O_{\dot{w}} = O_{\dot{v}}$ . ■

The following lemma gives information about the multiplicative group  $\mathbb{Q}_p^\times$  and its profinite completion  $\Phi = \varprojlim \mathbb{Q}_p^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$ .

LEMMA 6.8: (a) The canonical map  $\mathbb{Q}_p^\times \rightarrow \Phi$  is injective; we consider  $\mathbb{Q}_p^\times$  as a subgroup of  $\Phi$ .

(b) For each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$

$$(b1) \quad \mathbb{Q}^\times (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n = \mathbb{Q}_p^\times;$$



- (b2)  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^\times \cap \Phi^n = (\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^\times)^n$  and  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^\times \Phi^n = \Phi$ ; and  
(b3)  $\zeta \in \Phi$  and  $\zeta^n = 1$  implies  $\zeta \in \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^\times$ .

*Proof of (a):* The multiplicative group  $\mathbb{Q}_p^\times$  of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  has a canonical decomposition  $\mathbb{Q}_p^\times = \langle p \rangle \times \mathbb{Z}_p^\times$ . The discrete group  $\langle p \rangle$  generated by  $p$  is isomorphic to  $\mathbb{Z}$ . The group of units  $\mathbb{Z}_p^\times$  of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ , is compact and isomorphic to  $\mathbb{Z}/(p-1)\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{Z}_p$  if  $p \neq 2$  and to  $\mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z} \times \mathbb{Z}_2$  if  $p = 2$ . It follows that  $\bigcap_{n \in \mathbb{N}} (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n = 1$ . Hence the canonical map  $x \mapsto (x(\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$  of  $\mathbb{Q}_p^\times$  into  $\Phi$  is injective. We identify  $x$  with its image in  $\Phi$ .

*Proof of (b1):* Let  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ . From the proof of (a) it suffices to show that each  $x \in \mathbb{Z}_p^\times$  belongs to  $\mathbb{Q}^\times (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$ . Indeed  $x = a + p^{2v_p(n)+1}b$  with  $a \in \mathbb{Z}$ ,  $a \neq 0$  and  $b \in \mathbb{Z}_p$ . By the Hensel-Rychlik-Newton Lemma  $c = 1 + p^{2v_p(n)+1}a^{-1}b \in (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$ . Hence  $x = ac \in \mathbb{Q}^\times (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$ .

*Proof of (b2):* The group  $\Phi^n$  is the closure of  $(\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$  in  $\Phi$ . From [L2, p. 47]  $(\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$  is a closed subgroup of  $\mathbb{Q}_p^\times$  of finite index. Therefore  $(\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$  is open in  $\mathbb{Q}_p^\times$ . It follows that  $\mathbb{Q}_p^\times \cap \Phi^n = (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$ . Obviously  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^\times \cap (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n = (\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^\times)^n$ . Hence  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^\times \cap \Phi^n = (\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^\times)^n$ . Also,  $\mathbb{Q}_p^\times \Phi^n = \Phi$ . Therefore  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^\times \Phi^n = \Phi$  follows from (b1).

*Proof of (b3):* From (a),  $\Phi \cong \hat{\mathbb{Z}} \times \mathbb{Z}_p^\times$ . Since  $\hat{\mathbb{Z}}$  is torsion free, each  $\zeta \in \Phi$  with  $\zeta^n = 1$  belongs to  $\mathbb{Z}_p^\times$ , hence to  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^\times$ . ■

## 7. $F$ -closed fields.

In Section 6 we have associated a place  $\pi: K \rightarrow \mathbb{Q}_p \cup \{\infty\}$  to each  $p$ -adically closed field  $(K, v)$ . The results we achieve depend only on  $\text{char}(\mathbb{Q}_p) = 0$ . Also, in Section 9 we consider places into the algebraic closure of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ . Thus, to gain more clarity and generality, we replace  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  by some fixed field  $F$  of characteristic 0 and consider pairs  $(K, \pi)$  where  $\pi: K \rightarrow F \cup \{\infty\}$  is a place. Call each such pair an  **$F$ -valued placed field**. Let  $O_\pi = \{x \in K \mid \pi(x) \in F\}$  be the valuation ring of  $\pi$ . Denote the group  $\{u \in K \mid \pi(u) \in F^\times\}$  of  $\pi$ -units of  $K$  by  $U_\pi$  and denote the residue field of  $\pi$  by  $\pi(K)$ . Let  $(K', \pi')$  be an  $F$ -valued placed field that extends  $(K, \pi)$ . Take valuations  $v$  and  $v'$  of  $K$  and  $K'$ , corresponding to  $\pi$  and  $\pi'$  respectively such that  $v'$  extends  $v$ . We say that  $(K', \pi')$  is an **unramified extension** of  $(K, \pi)$  if  $v(K^\times) = v(K'^\times)$ . Lemmas 7.1-7.3 give information on the existence and uniqueness of extensions of  $F$ -valued placed fields.

LEMMA 7.1: Let  $(K, \pi)$  be an  $F$ -valued placed field. Denote the valuation of  $K$  that corresponds to  $\pi$  by  $v$ . Let  $\alpha$  be an element of the divisible closure  $\mathbb{Q} \otimes v(K^\times)$  of  $v(K^\times)$  and let  $n$  be the smallest positive integer such that  $n\alpha \in v(K^\times)$ . Choose an element  $a \in K^\times$  such that  $v(a) = n\alpha$ , let  $x = a^{1/n}$  and  $L = K(x)$ . Then  $\pi$  uniquely extends to an  $F$ -valued place  $\pi'$  of  $L$  with  $v'$  the corresponding valuation such that  $[L : K] = (v(L^\times) : v(K^\times)) = n$ .

*Proof:* Extend  $\pi$  to an  $\tilde{F}$ -valued place  $\pi'$  of  $L$  and let  $v'$  be the corresponding valuation that extends  $v$ . Then  $v'(x) = \alpha$  and

$$n \leq (\langle v(K^\times), \alpha \rangle : v(K^\times)) \leq (v'(L^\times) : v(K^\times)) \leq [L : K] \leq n.$$

Hence

$$(1) \quad (v'(L^\times) : v(K^\times)) = [L : K] = n.$$

Now let  $v'_1, \dots, v'_g$  be all extensions of  $v$  to  $L$ , and let  $L'_1, \dots, L'_g$  be their residue fields. Then, for the residue field  $K'$  of  $v$  we have [Ri, p. 228]

$$(2) \quad \sum_{i=1}^g (v'_i(L^\times) : v(K^\times)) [L'_i : K'] \leq [L : K].$$

Conclude from (1) and (2) that  $g = 1$ ,  $v'$  is the unique extension of  $v$  to  $L$  and the residue field of  $v'$  is  $K'$ . Thus  $\pi'$  is  $F$ -valued. If  $\pi''$  is another extension of  $\pi$  to  $L$ , then  $\pi''$  is equivalent to  $\pi'$ . That is, there exists an automorphism  $\sigma$  of  $K'$  (which is the residue field of both  $\pi'$  and  $\pi''$ ) such that  $\pi'' = \sigma \circ \pi'$ . For each  $x' \in K'$  take  $x \in K$  such that  $\pi(x) = x'$ . Then  $\sigma(x') = \sigma(\pi'(x)) = \pi''(x) = x'$ . Conclude that  $\pi'' = \pi'$ . ■

LEMMA 7.2: Let  $\pi: K \rightarrow F \cup \{\infty\}$  be a place and let  $K' = \pi(K)$  be its residue field. If  $K'$  is algebraically closed in  $F$ , then  $\pi$  maps  $K_{\text{alg}}$  isomorphically onto  $F_{\text{alg}}$ . Now suppose that  $L'$  is an algebraic extension of  $K'$  contained in  $F$ . Then  $\pi$  extends to a place  $\rho: L \rightarrow F \cup \{\infty\}$  such that  $L' = \rho(L)$  and  $(L, \rho)$  is an unramified extension of  $(K, \pi)$ .

*Proof:* Note that the restriction of  $\pi$  to  $K_{\text{alg}}$  is an embedding into  $F_{\text{alg}}$ . If  $\tilde{K}' \cap F = K'$ , then  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}} \cap F = \tilde{\mathbb{Q}} \cap \pi(K) = \pi(\tilde{\mathbb{Q}} \cap K)$ . Thus  $\pi$  maps  $K_{\text{alg}}$  isomorphically onto  $F_{\text{alg}}$ .

Next suppose that  $L'/K'$  is algebraic and  $L' \subseteq F$ . Use Zorn's lemma to reduce the existence of  $\rho$  to the case where  $L'/K'$  is finite, say of degree  $n$ . Choose a primitive element  $z'$  for  $L'/K'$  and let  $f' = \text{irr}(z', K')$ . Take a monic polynomial  $f \in O_\pi[X]$  with  $\deg(f) = \deg(f')$  such that  $\pi(f) = f'$ . Let  $z$  be a root of  $f$  and let  $L = K(z)$ . Extend  $\pi$  to a place  $\rho_1: L \rightarrow \tilde{K}'$ . Then  $z'_1 = \rho_1(z)$  is a root of  $f'$ . Hence

$$n = [K'(z'_1) : K'] \leq [\rho_1(L) : K'] \leq [L : K] \leq n.$$

It follows that  $[L : K] = n$  and  $f$  is irreducible. Thus  $\pi$  extends to a place  $\pi'$  of  $L$  such that  $\pi'(z) = z'$ . Since  $L' \subseteq \pi'(L)$  we have  $n = [L' : K'] \leq [\pi'(L) : K'] \leq [L : K] = n$ . Thus  $L' = \pi'(L)$  and  $\pi'$  is an  $F$ -valued place. Also, (2) implies that  $(L, \pi')/(K, \pi)$  is unramified. ■

LEMMA 7.3: Let  $\pi: K \rightarrow F \cup \{\infty\}$  be a place and let  $\pi_0 = \text{Res}_{K_{\text{alg}}} \pi$ . Consider an algebraic extension  $L_0$  of  $K_{\text{alg}}$  and an extension  $\pi'_0: L_0 \rightarrow F$ . Then for  $L = L_0 K$  there exists a unique place  $\pi': L \rightarrow F \cup \{\infty\}$  which extends both  $\pi$  and  $\pi'_0$ . Moreover,  $(L, \pi')/(K, \pi)$  is an unramified extension. In particular, if  $(K, \pi)$  has no unramified extension to a proper algebraic extension of  $K$ , then  $\pi$  maps  $K_{\text{alg}}$  isomorphically onto  $F_{\text{alg}}$ .

*Proof:* Let  $O$  be the valuation ring of  $\pi$ . Since  $\text{char}(F) = 0$ ,  $\pi'_0$  is an embedding of fields. Without loss assume that  $L_0/K_{\text{alg}}$  is a finite extension with a primitive element  $z$ . Since  $L_0$  is linearly disjoint from  $K$  over  $K_{\text{alg}}$  there exists a homomorphism  $\pi': O[z] \rightarrow F$  which extends both  $\pi'_0$  and  $\pi$ . The discriminant of  $z$  over  $K$  is a nonzero element of  $K_{\text{alg}}$ , hence a unit of  $O$ . Therefore, since  $O$  is integrally closed,  $O[z]$  is the integral closure of  $O$  in  $L$  [ZS, p. 264]. It follows that the local ring of  $O[z]$  with respect to  $\text{Ker}(\pi')$  is a valuation ring [L3, p. 18]. Conclude that  $\pi$  uniquely extends to a place  $\pi': L \rightarrow F \cup \{\infty\}$  such that  $\text{Res}_{L_0}\pi' = \pi'_0$ .

To prove the second assertion of the lemma consider  $f = \text{irr}(z, K_{\text{alg}})$ . Let  $\pi(f) = f_1 \cdots f_r$  be a factorization into irreducible factors over  $K' = \pi(K)$ . For each  $i$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq r$ , take a root  $z'_i$  of  $f_i$  and extend  $\pi$  to a place  $\rho_i$  of  $L$  such that  $\rho_i(z) = z'_i$ . Then  $\deg(f_i) \leq [\rho_i(L) : K']$ . Since the restriction of  $\pi$  to  $K_{\text{alg}}$  is injective  $f_1, \dots, f_r$  are distinct. Therefore  $\rho_1(L), \dots, \rho_r(L)$  are mutually nonisomorphic over  $K'$  and  $\rho_1, \dots, \rho_r$  are nonequivalent places. Let  $v$  be a valuation of  $K$  that corresponds to  $\pi$ . Let  $w_i$  be a valuation of  $L$  that corresponds to  $\rho_i$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, r$ . From (2)

$$\begin{aligned} [L : K] &= [L_0 : K_{\text{alg}}] = \deg(f) = \sum_{i=1}^r \deg(f_i) \\ &\leq \sum_{i=1}^r (w_i(L^\times) : v(K^\times)) [\rho_i(L) : K'] \leq [L : K]. \end{aligned}$$

Hence  $\rho_1, \dots, \rho_r$  represent all equivalent classes of places of  $L$  that extend  $\pi$ . Also  $w_i(L^\times) = v(K^\times)$ , that is,  $\rho_i$  is unramified over  $K$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, r$ . In particular,  $\pi'$ , which is equivalent to one of the  $\rho_i$ 's, is unramified over  $K$ .

To prove the last assertion note that if  $\pi_0(K_{\text{alg}})$  is properly contained in  $F_{\text{alg}}$ , then  $\pi_0$  extends to an embedding  $\pi'_0$  of a proper algebraic extension  $L_0$  into  $F$ . Then use the two first parts of the lemma. ■

Call an  $F$ -valued placed field  $(K, \pi)$ ,  **$F$ -closed** if  $\pi$  does not extend to a place  $\pi': K' \rightarrow F \cup \{\infty\}$  of a proper algebraic extension  $K'$  of  $K$ . If in addition  $(K, \pi)$  is an extension of an  $F$ -valued field  $(K_0, \pi_0)$  and  $K$  is algebraic over  $K_0$ , then  $(K, \pi)$  is an  **$F$ -closure** of  $(K_0, \pi_0)$ . The existence of an  $F$ -closure of a given  $F$ -valued field  $(K_0, \pi_0)$  is a straightforward application of Zorn's lemma.

REMARK 7.4: From Lemma 6.7, a  $p$ -adically valued field  $(K, v)$  is  $p$ -adically closed if and only if the corresponding  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ -placed field  $(K, \pi_v)$  is  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ -closed. ■

The following characterization of  $F$ -closed placed fields overlaps with [PR, Thm. 3.1].

LEMMA 7.5: *Let  $(K, \pi)$  be an  $F$ -valued placed field and let  $v$  be the valuation of  $K$  that corresponds to  $\pi$ . The following three conditions are equivalent:*

- (3)  $(K, \pi)$  is  $F$ -closed;
- (4a) every proper algebraic extension  $(K', \pi')$  of  $(K, \pi)$  to an  $F$ -valued placed field is ramified (i.e.,  $v(K^\times)$  is a proper subgroup of  $v(K'^\times)$ ); and
- (4b)  $v(K^\times)$  is a divisible group;  
and
- (5a) the residue field  $K_0 = \pi(K)$  is algebraically closed in  $F$ ;
- (5b)  $(K, v)$  is Henselian; and
- (5c)  $v(K^\times)$  is a divisible group.

*Proof that (3) implies (4):* Condition (3) implies that  $(K, \pi)$  has no proper algebraic extensions to  $F$ -valued placed fields. Thus (4a) is trivially fulfilled and (4b) follows from Lemma 7.1.

*Proof that (4) implies (5):* Condition (5a) follows from (4a) by Lemma 7.2. Since in the transfer from  $(K, v)$  to its Henselian closure neither the residue field nor the value group are changed (4a) implies that  $(K, v)$  is Henselian.

*Proof that (5) implies (3):* Let  $(L, \rho)$  be an  $F$ -valued finite extension of  $(K, \pi)$  and let  $w$  be the unique (by (5b)) extension of  $v$  to  $L$ . By (5a),  $\pi(K) = \rho(L)$ . Since  $L/K$  is algebraic  $w(L^\times)$  is contained in the divisible hull of  $v(K^\times)$ . Hence, by (5c),  $v(K^\times) = w(L^\times)$ . As  $\text{char}(F) = 0$  and  $K$  is Henselian,  $[L : K] = [\rho(L) : \pi(K)][w(L^\times) : v(K^\times)] = 1$  [A2, Prop. 15]. Conclude that  $(K, \pi)$  is  $F$ -closed. ■

LEMMA 7.6: *Let  $(K, \pi)$  be an  $F$ -closed placed field.*

- (a) The place  $\pi$  maps  $K_{\text{alg}}$  isomorphically onto  $F_{\text{alg}}$ .
- (b) Suppose that for a positive integer  $m$ ,  $F_{\text{alg}}^\times (F^\times)^m = F^\times$ . Then  $K_{\text{alg}}^\times (K^\times)^m = K^\times$ .

*Proof:* Lemma 7.5(5a) and Lemma 7.2 imply (a). To prove (b) let  $x \in K^\times$ . Denote the valuation of  $K$  that corresponds to  $\pi$  by  $v$ . By Lemma 7.5(5c) there exists  $y \in K^\times$  such that  $mv(y) = v(x)$ . Then, for  $z = xy^{-m}$  we have  $v(z) = 0$  and therefore  $\pi(z) \in F^\times$ . By assumption there exist  $b \in F_{\text{alg}}^\times$  and  $c \in F^\times$  such that  $\pi(z) = bc^m$ . Choose  $u \in K_{\text{alg}}$  such that  $\pi(u) = b$ . Observe that  $c$  solves the equation  $\pi(u)T^m = \pi(z)$ . Apply Hensel's lemma (Lemma 7.5(5b)) to the polynomial  $uT^m - z$  to conclude the existence of  $t \in K^\times$  such that  $ut^m = z$ . Thus  $x = u(ty)^m \in K_{\text{alg}}^\times (K^\times)^m$ . ■

LEMMA 7.7: Let  $\pi: K \rightarrow F \cup \{\infty\}$  be a place, with  $v$  the corresponding valuation such that the value group  $v(K^\times)$  is divisible. Let  $(K_1, \pi_1)$  and  $(K_2, \pi_2)$  be  $F$ -closures of  $(K, \pi)$ . Then there exists a unique  $K$ -isomorphism  $\sigma: K_1 \rightarrow K_2$  such that  $\pi_1 = \pi_2 \circ \sigma$ .

*Proof:* For  $i = 1, 2$  let  $v_i$  be the valuation of  $K_i$  corresponding to  $\pi_i$ . Since  $(K_i, v_i)$  is Henselian (by (5b)), it contains a Henselization  $(K_i^h, v_i^h)$  of  $(K, v)$ . The residue field  $K'$  of  $K$  with respect to  $v$  is the residue field of  $K_i^h$  with respect to  $v_i^h$ . Extend  $\pi_i$  to a place  $\tilde{\pi}_i$  of  $\tilde{K}$  with residue field  $\tilde{K}'$  and let  $\tilde{v}_i$  be the corresponding valuation. Since  $\tilde{v}_i(\tilde{K}^\times)$  is the divisible hull of  $v(K^\times)$  [Ri, p.256] it coincides with  $v(K^\times)$ , i.e.,  $\tilde{v}_i$  is unramified over  $K$ . In addition, since  $\text{char}(K') = 0$ , the extension  $(\tilde{K}, \tilde{v}_i)/(K, v)$  is defectless. Therefore the inertia subgroup  $I(\tilde{v}_i) = \{\kappa \in G(K_i) \mid \tilde{\pi}_i \circ \kappa = \tilde{\pi}_i\}$  of  $\tilde{v}_i/v$  is trivial [E, p.184] and the map  $L \mapsto \tilde{\pi}_i(L)$  is a bijective correspondence between the set of algebraic extensions of  $K_i^h$  and the algebraic extensions of  $K'$  [E, p.162].

Suppose now that  $\sigma, \tau: K_1 \rightarrow K_2$  are  $K$ -isomorphisms such that  $\pi_2 \circ \sigma = \pi_1 = \pi_2 \circ \tau$ . Extend  $\sigma, \tau$  to  $\tilde{\sigma}, \tilde{\tau} \in G(K)$ . Then there exists  $\tilde{\rho} \in G(K_1)$  such that  $\tilde{\pi}_2 \circ \tilde{\sigma} \circ \tilde{\rho} = \tilde{\pi}_2 \circ \tilde{\tau}$  [L1, p. 247]. Therefore  $\tilde{\sigma}\tilde{\rho} \cdot (\tilde{\tau})^{-1}$  belongs to  $I(\tilde{v}_2)$ . Thus  $\tilde{\sigma}\tilde{\rho}(\tilde{\tau})^{-1} = 1$ . Restrict this equality to  $K_2$  to conclude that  $\sigma = \tau$ . This proves the uniqueness of  $\sigma$ .

To prove the existence of  $\sigma$  note first that there exists a  $K$ -isomorphism  $\sigma^h: K_1^h \rightarrow K_2^h$  such that  $v_1^h = v_2^h \circ \sigma^h$  [Ri, p. 176]. Hence there exists an automorphism  $\rho$  of  $K'$  such that  $\rho \circ \pi_1^h = \pi_2^h \circ \sigma^h$ . Apply both sides on the elements of  $O_v$  to conclude that  $\rho = 1$ . Extend  $\sigma^h$  further to  $\tilde{\sigma} \in G(K)$  such that  $\tilde{\pi}_1 = \tilde{\pi}_2 \circ \tilde{\sigma}$  [L1, p. 247]. By (5a)

$$\tilde{\pi}_2(\tilde{\sigma}K_1) = \pi_1(K_1) = \tilde{K}' \cap F = \pi_2(K_2) = \tilde{\pi}_2(K_2).$$

Since both  $\tilde{\sigma}K_1$  and  $K_2$  are algebraic extensions of  $K_2^h$  the first paragraph of the proof

implies that  $\tilde{\sigma}K_1 = K_2$ . Let  $\sigma$  be the restriction of  $\tilde{\sigma}$  to  $K_1$  and obtain  $\pi_1 = \pi_2 \circ \sigma$ .

■

## 8. Sites.

Let  $\overline{K}$  be a  $p$ -adic closure of a formally  $p$ -adic field. Proposition 6.2 characterizes  $\overline{K}$  up to  $K$ -isomorphism by the sequence  $K \cap \overline{K}^n$ ,  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ . For each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ ,  $K^\times \cap \overline{K}^n$  is the kernel of the canonical homomorphism  $K^\times \rightarrow \overline{K}^\times / (\overline{K}^\times)^n$ . Observe that  $K_{\text{alg}}^\times \cap (K^\times)^n = (K_{\text{alg}}^\times)^n$ . Since  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^m = \mathbb{Q}_p^\times$  (Lemma 6.8(b1)) Lemma 7.6(b) with  $F = \mathbb{Q}_p$  implies that  $K_{\text{alg}}^\times (K^\times)^n = K^\times$ . Thus, by Lemma 7.6(a)

$$\overline{K}^\times / (\overline{K}^\times)^n \cong \overline{K}_{\text{alg}}^\times / (\overline{K}_{\text{alg}}^\times)^n \cong \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^\times)^n \cong \mathbb{Q}_p^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n.$$

Therefore  $\overline{K}$  induces a compatible sequence of homomorphisms  $\varphi_n: K^\times \rightarrow \mathbb{Q}_p^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$ , such that  $K \cap \overline{K}^n = \text{Ker}(\varphi_n)$ ,  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ . It defines a homomorphism  $\varphi: K^\times \rightarrow \varprojlim \mathbb{Q}_p^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$ .

As in Section 7 we replace  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  by a field  $F$  of characteristic 0 and  $\varprojlim \mathbb{Q}_p^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$  by a group  $\Phi$ . The properties (a)-(d) of Lemma 6.8 that  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  and  $\mathbb{Q}_p^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$  have are made here as assumptions on  $F$  and  $\Phi$ .

ASSUMPTION 8.1: (a)  $F^\times$  is a subgroup of  $\Phi$ .

(b) For each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$

(b1)  $F_{\text{alg}}^\times (F^\times)^n = F^\times$ ;

(b2)  $F_{\text{alg}}^\times \cap \Phi^n = (F_{\text{alg}}^\times)^n$  and  $F_{\text{alg}}^\times \Phi^n = \Phi$ ; and

(b3)  $\zeta \in \Phi$  and  $\zeta^n = 1$  implies  $\zeta \in F_{\text{alg}}^\times$ .

Note that Lemma 6.8(b1) is somewhat stronger for  $F = \mathbb{Q}_p$  than Assumption 8.1(b1). We denote the set theoretic union  $F \cup \{\infty\} \cup \Phi$  by  $\Theta$ .

DEFINITION 8.2: Let  $K$  be a field of characteristic 0,  $\pi: K \rightarrow F \cup \{\infty\}$  a place and  $\varphi: K^\times \rightarrow \Phi$  a homomorphism. We say that the pair  $(\pi, \varphi)$  is a  $\Theta$ -site of  $K$  if  $\varphi(u) = \pi(u)$  for every  $u \in U_\pi$  (see Notation).

Let  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$  and  $\theta' = (\pi', \varphi')$  be  $\Theta$ -sites of fields  $K$  and  $K'$ , respectively. We say that  $(K', \theta')$  **extends**  $(K, \theta)$  if  $K \subseteq K'$ ,  $\pi'$  extends  $\pi$  and  $\varphi'$  extends  $\varphi$ . If  $\sigma$  is an isomorphism of a field  $K_0$  onto  $K$ , then  $\theta \circ \sigma = (\pi \circ \sigma, \varphi \circ \sigma)$  is a  $\Theta$ -site of  $K_0$ .

REMARK 8.3: Most of this section and Sections 9 and 10 holds if we replace Assumption 8.1(a) by a weaker assumption saying that there exists a homomorphism  $\eta: F^\times \rightarrow \Phi$ . The connection between  $\pi$  and  $\varphi$  in a  $\Theta$ -site has to be modified to  $\varphi(u) = \eta(\pi(u))$  for each  $u \in U_\pi$ .

In this version ordered fields may also be viewed as  $\Theta$ -sites. Here  $F = \mathbb{R}$ ,  $\Phi = \{\pm 1\}$  and  $\eta: \mathbb{R}^\times \rightarrow \Phi$  is the sign function. Then the obvious modification of Assumption 8.1(b) is true. If  $(K, \leq)$  is an ordered field, then the ring of “finite elements”  $O = \{x \in K \mid \exists r \in \mathbb{Q}: |x| \leq r\}$  is a valuation ring of  $K$ . The corresponding place  $\pi$  defined for  $x \in O$  by  $\pi(x) = \sup\{r \in \mathbb{Q} \mid r < x\}$  maps  $K$  into  $\mathbb{R} \cup \{\infty\}$ . The homomorphism  $\varphi: K^\times \rightarrow \Phi$  is defined by  $\varphi(x) = 1$  if and only if  $x > 0$ . If  $\pi(u) \in \mathbb{R}^\times$ , then  $0 < r < |u| < s$  for some  $r, s \in \mathbb{Q}$ , hence  $r \leq |\pi(u)| < s$  and therefore  $\varphi(u) = \eta(\pi(u))$ . Thus  $(\pi, \varphi)$  is a  $\Theta$ -site. Conversely, if  $(\pi, \varphi)$  is a  $\Theta$ -site, then “ $x > 0$  if and only if  $\varphi(x) = 1$ ” defines an ordering of  $K$ .

LEMMA 8.4: Let  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$  be a  $\Theta$ -site of  $K$  and  $v$  the valuation corresponding to  $\pi$ . Let  $\alpha$  be an element of the divisible hull of  $v(K^\times)$  and let  $n$  be the smallest positive integer such that  $n\alpha \in v(K^\times)$ . Choose  $a \in K^\times$  such that  $v(a) = n\alpha$ , let  $x = a^{1/n}$  and let  $L = K(x)$ . Suppose that there exists  $\omega \in \Phi$  such that  $\omega^n = \varphi(a)$ . Then  $\theta$  extends to a unique  $\Theta$ -site  $\theta' = (\pi', \varphi')$  of  $L$  such that  $\varphi'(x) = \omega$ .

*Proof:* By Lemma 7.1 it suffices to prove only the existence and uniqueness of  $\varphi'$ . Write each  $y \in L^\times$  in the form  $y = \sum_{i=0}^{n-1} b_i x^i$  with  $b_i \in K$ . Let  $v'$  be the valuation of  $L$  that corresponds to  $\pi'$ . If  $0 \leq i < j < n$ , then, since  $v'(x) = \alpha$ ,  $v'(b_i x^i) \neq v'(b_j x^j)$ . Hence there exists  $i \in \mathbb{Z}$  and  $b \in K^\times$  such that  $v'(y) = v'(bx^i)$ . In particular  $\pi'(yb^{-1}x^{-i}) \in F^\times$ . Define  $\varphi'(y) = \varphi(b)\omega^i \pi'(yb^{-1}x^{-i})$ . If also  $j \in \mathbb{Z}$  and  $c \in K^\times$  are elements such that  $v'(y) = v'(cx^j)$ , then  $n$  divides  $j - i$  and hence  $u = bc^{-1}x^{i-j} \in U_\pi$ . It follows that

$$\begin{aligned} \varphi(c)\omega^j \pi'(yc^{-1}x^{-j}) &= \varphi(c)\omega^i \omega^{j-i} \pi(u) \pi'(yb^{-1}x^{-i}) \\ &= \varphi(c)\omega^i \varphi(a^{(j-i)/n}) \varphi(u) \pi'(yb^{-1}x^{-i}) \\ &= \varphi(c)\omega^i \varphi(bc^{-1}) \pi'(yb^{-1}x^{-i}) = \varphi(b)\omega^i \pi'(yb^{-1}x^{-i}). \end{aligned}$$

Thus,  $\varphi'$  is well defined. Moreover, one easily checks that  $\varphi'$  is a homomorphism of  $L^\times$  into  $\Phi$  and that it extends  $\varphi$ .



If  $(\pi', \varphi'')$  is another  $\Theta$ -site which extends  $\theta$  such that  $\varphi''(x) = \omega$ , and  $y$  is as above, then apply  $\varphi''$  on the identity  $y = bx^i \cdot yb^{-1}x^{-i}$  to obtain

$$\varphi''(y) = \varphi(b)\omega^i\varphi''(yb^{-1}x^{-i}) = \varphi(b)\omega^i\pi'(yb^{-1}x^{-i}) = \varphi'(y).$$

This proves the uniqueness of  $\theta'$ . ■

LEMMA 8.5: Let  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$  be a  $\Theta$ -site of  $K$  and let  $L$  an algebraic extension of  $K$ . Let  $\pi'$  be an  $F$ -place of  $L$ , unramified over  $K$  and which extends  $\pi$ . Then  $\varphi$  uniquely extends to a homomorphism  $\varphi': L^\times \rightarrow \Phi$  such that  $(\pi', \varphi')$  is a  $\Theta$ -site. Moreover

$$(1) \quad \varphi'(L^\times) \subseteq \varphi'(K^\times) \cdot \pi'(L)^\times.$$

*Proof:* Let  $v'$  be a valuation of  $L$  that corresponds to  $\pi'$ . By assumption  $v'(L^\times) = v'(K^\times)$ . Hence, for each  $y \in L^\times$  there exists  $b \in K^\times$  such that  $v'(y) = v'(b)$  and therefore  $\pi'(yb^{-1}) \in F^\times$ . Define  $\varphi'(y) = \varphi(b)\pi'(yb^{-1})$ . As in the proof of Lemma 8.4 this definition is independent of  $b$ , it is unique and gives the desired extension  $(\pi', \varphi')$  of  $\theta$  such that (1) holds. ■

Let  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$  be a  $\Theta$ -site of a field  $K$ . We say that  $(K, \theta)$  is  **$\Theta$ -closed** if  $\theta$  does not extend to a  $\Theta$ -site of a proper algebraic extension of  $K$ . If in addition  $(K, \theta)$  is an extension of a  $\Theta$ -site  $(K_0, \theta_0)$  and  $K/K_0$  is algebraic, then  $(K, \theta)$  is a  **$\Theta$ -closure** of  $(K_0, \theta_0)$ . Note that if  $(K, \pi)$  is  $F$ -closed, then  $(K, \theta)$  is  $\Theta$ -closed. The converse of this is less obvious but equally true.

LEMMA 8.6: Let  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$  be a  $\Theta$ -site of  $K$  such that  $(K, \theta)$  is  $\Theta$ -closed. Then  $(K, \pi)$  is  $F$ -closed.

*Proof:* By Lemma 8.5,  $\pi$  has no unramified extension to an  $F$ -place of a proper algebraic extension of  $K$ . Hence, by Lemma 7.3,  $\pi$  maps  $K_{\text{alg}}$  isomorphically onto  $F_{\text{alg}}$ . Let  $v$  be the valuation of  $K$  corresponding to  $\pi$ . By Lemma 7.5 it suffices to show that  $v(K^\times)$  is divisible.

Let  $\alpha$  be an element of the divisible hull of  $v(K^\times)$  and let  $n$  be the smallest positive integer such that  $n\alpha = v(a)$  with  $a \in K^\times$ . By Assumption 8.1(b2), there exists  $u_0 \in F_{\text{alg}}^\times$  and  $\omega \in \Phi$  such that  $u_0 = \varphi(a)\omega^{-n}$ . Let  $a_0$  be the element of  $K_{\text{alg}}^\times$  such that  $\pi(a_0) = u_0$ .

Then  $\varphi(a_0) = \pi(a_0) = \varphi(a)\omega^{-n}$ . Thus  $\varphi(aa_0^{-1}) = \omega^n$  and, since  $v(a_0) = 0$ ,  $n$  is the smallest positive integer such that  $v(aa_0^{-1}) = n\alpha$ . By Lemma 8.4,  $\theta$  extends to a  $\Theta$ -site of  $L = K((aa_0^{-1})^{1/n})$ . But then  $L = K$  and therefore  $\alpha = v((aa_0^{-1})^{1/n}) \in v(K^\times)$ . Thus  $v(K^\times)$  is divisible. ■

PROPOSITION 8.7: Let  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$  be a  $\Theta$ -site of a field  $K$ . Then  $(K, \theta)$  has a  $\Theta$ -closure  $(\bar{K}, \bar{\theta})$ . If  $(K', \theta')$  is another  $\Theta$ -closure of  $(K, \theta)$ , then there exists a unique  $K$ -isomorphism  $\sigma: \bar{K} \rightarrow K'$  such that  $\bar{\theta} = \theta' \circ \sigma$ .

*Proof:* The existence of  $(\bar{K}, \bar{\theta})$  follows from Zorn's lemma. To prove the existence and uniqueness of  $\sigma$  apply Zorn's lemma again to construct a maximal extension  $(K_1, \theta_1)$  of  $(K, \theta)$  such that  $(\bar{K}, \bar{\theta})$  extends  $(K_1, \theta_1)$  and for which there exists a unique  $K$ -embedding  $\sigma: K_1 \rightarrow K'$  such that  $\theta' = \theta \circ \sigma$  on  $K_1$ . If we show that  $(K_1, \theta_1)$  is  $\Theta$ -closed, then so will be  $(\sigma(K_1), \theta_1 \circ \sigma)$  and therefore  $\sigma(K_1) = K'$ .

Without loss assume that  $\sigma$  is the identity. Otherwise extend  $\sigma$  to an automorphism of  $\tilde{K}$ , replace  $(K_1, \theta_1)$  by  $(\sigma(K_1), \theta_1 \circ \sigma)$  and  $(\bar{K}, \bar{\theta})$  by  $(\sigma(\bar{K}), \bar{\theta} \circ \sigma)$ . Further, replace  $(K, \theta)$  by  $(K_1, \theta_1)$  to assume that  $(K, \theta)$  has no proper extension  $(K_2, \theta_2)$  for which there exists a unique  $K$ -embedding  $\sigma: K_2 \rightarrow K'$  such that  $\theta' = \theta \circ \sigma$  on  $K_2$ . We have to show that  $K = \bar{K}$ .

Let  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$ ,  $\bar{\theta} = (\bar{\pi}, \bar{\varphi})$  and  $\theta' = (\pi', \varphi')$ . Denote the valuation of  $K$  (resp.,  $\bar{K}$ ,  $K'$ ) that corresponds to  $\pi$  (resp.,  $\bar{\pi}$ ,  $\pi'$ ) by  $v$  (resp.,  $\bar{v}$ ,  $v'$ ). We divide the rest of the proof into three parts.

PART A:  $K_{\text{alg}} = \bar{K}_{\text{alg}}$  and  $\pi$  maps  $K_{\text{alg}}$  isomorphically onto  $F_{\text{alg}}$ . By Lemma 8.6  $(\bar{K}, \bar{\pi})$  and  $(K', \pi')$  are  $F$ -closed. Therefore, by Lemmas 7.5(5a) and 7.2,  $\bar{\pi}$  (resp.,  $\pi'$ ) maps  $\bar{K}_{\text{alg}}$  (resp.,  $K'_{\text{alg}}$ ) isomorphically onto  $F_{\text{alg}}$ . Thus there exists a unique  $K_{\text{alg}}$ -isomorphism  $\sigma_0: \bar{K}_{\text{alg}} \rightarrow K'_{\text{alg}}$  such that  $\bar{\pi} = \pi' \circ \sigma_0$  on  $\bar{K}_{\text{alg}}$ . Since  $\bar{K}_{\text{alg}}$  and  $K$  are linearly disjoint over  $K_{\text{alg}}$ ,  $\sigma_0$  uniquely extends to a  $K$ -isomorphism  $\sigma: \bar{K}_{\text{alg}}K \rightarrow K'_{\text{alg}}K$ . By Lemma 7.3,  $\bar{\pi} = \pi' \circ \sigma$  on  $\bar{K}_{\text{alg}}K$ . Moreover, the restriction of  $\bar{\pi}$  to  $\bar{K}_{\text{alg}}K$  is an unramified extension of  $\pi$ . Hence, by Lemma 8.5,  $\bar{\varphi} = \varphi' \circ \sigma$  on  $\bar{K}_{\text{alg}}K$ . Thus  $\bar{\theta} = \theta' \circ \sigma$  on  $\bar{K}_{\text{alg}}K$ . Conclude that  $\bar{K}_{\text{alg}}K = K$ ,  $\bar{K}_{\text{alg}} = K_{\text{alg}}$  and  $\pi$  maps  $K_{\text{alg}}$  isomorphically onto  $F_{\text{alg}}$ .

PART B:  $v(K^\times)$  is divisible. Let  $\alpha$  be an element of the divisible hull of  $v(K^\times)$ . Let  $n$  be the smallest positive integer such that  $n\alpha \in v(K^\times)$ . As in the proof of Lemma 8.6 (use Part A instead of Lemma 7.3) find  $a \in K^\times$  and  $\omega \in \Phi$  such that  $v(a) = n\alpha$  and  $\varphi(a) = \omega^n$ . By Assumption 8.1(b1) and Lemma 7.6  $\overline{K}_{\text{alg}}^\times (\overline{K}^\times)^n = \overline{K}^\times$ . Hence there exists  $b \in \overline{K}_{\text{alg}}^\times$  such that  $ab \in (\overline{K}^\times)^n$ . Thus  $\varphi(b) \in \Phi^n$ . By Assumption 8.1(b2),  $\varphi(b) \in (F_{\text{alg}}^\times)^n$ . Hence, by Part A,  $b \in (\overline{K}_{\text{alg}}^\times)^n$ . Conclude that there exists  $y \in \overline{K}^\times$  such that  $y^n = a$ . Apply  $\bar{\varphi}$  to obtain  $\bar{\varphi}(y)^n = \varphi(a) = \omega^n$ . From Assumption 8.1(b3),  $\bar{\varphi}(y)\omega^{-1} \in F_{\text{alg}}^\times$ . Hence Part A gives an  $n$ th root of unity  $z \in K_{\text{alg}}$  such that  $\varphi(z) = \bar{\varphi}(y)\omega^{-1}$ . Thus  $x = yz^{-1}$  satisfies  $x^n = a$  and  $\bar{\varphi}(x) = \omega$ . If  $x_1 \in \overline{K}^\times$  also satisfies  $x_1^n = a$  and  $\bar{\varphi}(x_1) = \omega$ , then  $(xx_1^{-1})^n = 1$ . In particular  $xx_1^{-1} \in \overline{K}_{\text{alg}}^\times$  and  $\bar{\varphi}(xx_1^{-1}) = 1$ . From Part A  $x = x_1$ .

Similarly there exists a unique  $x' \in K'$  such that  $(x')^n = a$  and  $\varphi'(x') = \omega$ . By Lemma 7.1, the polynomial  $X^n - a$  is irreducible over  $K$ . Hence there exists a unique  $K$ -embedding  $\sigma: K(x) \rightarrow K'$  such that  $\sigma(x) = x'$ . By Lemma 7.1,  $\bar{\pi} = \pi' \circ \sigma$  on  $K(x)$ . Since  $\varphi'(\sigma(x)) = \varphi'(x') = \omega = \bar{\varphi}(x)$ , Lemma 8.4 implies that  $\bar{\varphi} = \varphi' \circ \sigma$  on  $K(x)$ . Finally observe that if  $\sigma': K(x) \rightarrow K'$  is a  $K$ -embedding such that  $\bar{\theta} = \theta' \circ \sigma'$ , then  $\varphi'(\sigma'(x)) = \bar{\varphi}(x) = \omega$  and  $\sigma'(x)^n = \sigma'(a) = a$ . Thus the uniqueness of  $x'$  implies that  $\sigma'(x) = x'$  and  $\sigma' = \sigma$ . Conclude that  $K(x) = K$  and therefore  $n = 1$ .

PART C: Conclusion. By Part B and Lemma 7.7 there exists a unique  $K$ -embedding  $\sigma: \overline{K} \rightarrow K'$  such that  $\bar{\pi} = \pi' \circ \sigma$ . From Lemma 8.5,  $\bar{\varphi}' \circ \sigma$ . Conclude that  $\overline{K} = K$ . That is,  $(K, \pi)$  is  $F$ -closed. ■

LEMMA 8.8: Let  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$  and  $\theta' = (\pi', \varphi')$  be  $\Theta$ -sites of a field  $K$ . Then

- (a)  $\pi(x) = 0$  if and only if  $\varphi(1+x) = \varphi(1-x) = 1$ ; and
- (b)  $\varphi = \varphi'$  implies  $\pi = \pi'$ .

*Proof of (a):* If  $\pi(x) = 0$ , then  $\varphi(1 \pm x) = \pi(1 \pm x) = 1$ . If  $\pi(x) = \infty$ , then  $\pi(x^{-1}) = 0$ , hence  $\varphi(1 \pm x^{-1}) = 1$ . Therefore  $\varphi(1+x) = \varphi(x)$  and  $\varphi(1-x) = \varphi(-x) = \pi(-1)\varphi(x) = -\varphi(x) \neq \varphi(1+x)$ . If  $\pi(x) = -1$ , then  $\varphi(1-x) = \pi(1-x) = 2 \neq 1$ . Finally if  $\pi(x) \neq -1, 0, \infty$ , then  $\pi(1+x) \neq 0, 1, \infty$ , hence  $\varphi(1+x) = \pi(1+x) \neq 1$ .

Proof of (b): Apply (a) to  $x \in K^\times$ :

$$\begin{aligned} \pi(x) = 0 &\iff \varphi'(1 \pm x) = \varphi(1 \pm x) = 1 \iff \pi'(x) = 0 \\ \pi(x) = \infty &\iff \pi(x^{-1}) = 0 \iff \pi'(x^{-1}) = 0 \iff \pi'(x) = \infty. \end{aligned}$$

It follows that  $U_\pi = U_{\pi'}$ . For  $x \in U_\pi$  we have  $\pi(x) = \varphi(x) = \varphi'(x) = \pi'(x)$ . Conclude that  $\pi = \pi'$ . ■

The following result is restricted to the case  $F = \mathbb{Q}_p$  and  $\Phi = \varprojlim \mathbb{Q}_p^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$ .

PROPOSITION 8.9: Let  $(K, \pi)$  be a  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ -closed placed field.

- (a) There exists a unique homomorphism  $\varphi: K^\times \rightarrow \Phi$  which is the identity on  $\mathbb{Q}^\times$ .  
Moreover,  $(\pi, \varphi)$  is a  $\Theta$ -site.
- (b)  $\pi$  is the only  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ -place of  $K$ .
- (c) If  $K/K_0$  is an algebraic extension, then  $\text{Aut}(K/K_0) = 1$ .

Proof of (a): Let  $x \in K^\times$  and  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ . By Lemma 6.8(b1) there exists  $a_n \in \mathbb{Q}^\times$  such that  $x \in a_n(K^\times)^n$ . If  $b$  is another element of  $\mathbb{Q}^\times$  such that  $x \in b(K^\times)^n$ , then  $a_n b^{-1} \in \mathbb{Q} \cap (K_{\text{alg}}^\times)^n$ . Hence  $a_n b^{-1} = \pi(a_n b^{-1}) \in (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$ . Therefore  $a_n$  is unique modulo  $(\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$ . This implies for  $m|n$  that  $a_n \in a_m(\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^m$ . Thus there is a unique  $\varphi(x) \in \Phi$  such that  $\varphi(x) \in a_n \Phi^n$  for each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ . Obviously  $\varphi: K^\times \rightarrow \Phi$  is a homomorphism with  $\varphi(x) = x$  for each  $x \in \mathbb{Q}^\times$ .

If  $\psi: K^\times \rightarrow \Phi$  is another homomorphism which is the identity on  $\mathbb{Q}^\times$ , then  $\varphi(x)\psi(x)^{-1} = (\varphi(x)a_n^{-1})(a_n\psi(x)^{-1}) \in \Phi^n$  for each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$ . Therefore  $\varphi(x) = \psi(x)$ .

If  $x \in U_\pi$ , then, since also  $a_n \in U_\pi$ , so is  $xa_n^{-1}$ . Hence  $\pi(x)a_n^{-1} = \pi(xa_n^{-1}) \in (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$ . Conclude that  $\pi(x) = \varphi(x)$  and that  $(\pi, \varphi)$  is a  $\Theta$ -site.

Proof of (b): If  $\pi'$  is a  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ -place of  $K$ , then, by (a),  $(\pi', \varphi)$  is a  $\Theta$ -site of  $K$ . Conclude from Lemma 8.8 that  $\pi' = \pi$ .

Proof of (c): Let  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$  and  $\theta_0 = \text{Res}_{K_0}\theta$ . Then  $(K, \theta)$  is a  $\Theta$ -closure of  $(K_0, \theta_0)$ . By (a) and (b) each  $\sigma \in \text{Aut}(K/K_0)$  satisfies  $\theta = \theta \circ \sigma$ . Conclude from Proposition 8.7 that  $\sigma = 1$ . ■

COROLLARY 8.10: For each  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ -place  $\pi$  of a field  $K$  there exists a homomorphism  $\varphi: K^\times \rightarrow \Phi$  such that  $(\pi, \varphi)$  is a  $\Theta$ -site.

*Proof:* Let  $(\overline{K}, \overline{\pi})$  be a  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ -closure of  $(K, \pi)$ . By Proposition 8.9(a)  $\overline{K}$  has a  $\Theta$ -site  $(\overline{\pi}, \overline{\varphi})$ . Then  $(\pi, \text{Res}_{\overline{K}/K} \overline{\varphi})$  is a  $\Theta$ -site of  $K$ . ■

REMARK: Note that Proposition 8.7 implies Macintyre's result (Proposition 6.2). Indeed in the notation of Proposition 6.2 let  $\pi_i$  be the  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ -place that corresponds to  $v_i$ . Let  $\varphi_i$  be the unique homomorphism  $\varphi_i: L_i^\times \rightarrow \Phi$  such that  $(\pi_i, \varphi_i)$  is a  $\Theta$ -site,  $i = 1, 2$  (Proposition 8.9). Suppose that  $K \cap L_1^n = K \cap L_2^n$  for  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ . For each  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  and each  $x \in L_i^\times$  there exists  $a \in \mathbb{Q}^\times$  such that  $\varphi_1(x) \equiv a \pmod{\Phi^n}$  (Lemma 6.8). By Lemma 6.8 there exists  $b \in \mathbb{Q}^\times$  such that  $xa^{-1}b^{-1} \in \Phi^n$ . Then  $b \in \mathbb{Q} \cap \Phi^n \subseteq \mathbb{Q}_p^n$ . It follows that  $\varphi_2(x) \equiv a \pmod{\Phi^n}$ . Hence  $\varphi_1(x) \equiv \varphi_2(x) \pmod{\Phi^n}$ . Since this is true for each  $n$  we have  $\varphi_1(x) = \varphi_2(x)$ . Conclude from Proposition 8.7 that  $L_1 \cong_K L_2$ . ■

## 9. $\tilde{\Theta}$ -sites.

Each  $F$ -place  $\pi$  of a field  $K$  extends to an  $\tilde{F}$ -place of  $\tilde{K}$ . An analogue of this holds for sites. For each algebraic extension  $E$  of  $F$  define a group

$$\Phi_E = E^\times \times \Phi / \{(a^{-1}, a) \mid a \in F^\times\}.$$

For  $x \in E^\times$  and  $\omega \in \Phi$  define the class of  $(x, \omega)$  modulo the subgroup  $\{(a^{-1}, a) \mid a \in F^\times\}$  to be  $[x, \omega]$ . In particular  $[x, \omega] = [xa^{-1}, \omega a]$  for every  $a \in F^\times$ . Both  $E^\times$  and  $\Phi$  can be embedded in  $\Phi_E$  by  $x \mapsto [x, 1]$  and  $\omega \mapsto [1, \omega]$ , respectively. These embeddings coincide on  $F^\times$ .

The case  $E = \tilde{F}$  deserves special attention. We write  $\tilde{\Phi}$  for  $\Phi_{\tilde{F}}$ . Note that  $\tilde{\Phi}$  is the union  $\bigcup \Phi_E$  where  $E$  ranges over all finite extensions of  $F$ .

LEMMA 9.1: The group  $\tilde{\Phi}$  is divisible.

*Proof:* Let  $n$  be a positive integer. For  $x \in \tilde{F}^\times$  and  $\omega \in \Phi$  choose  $b \in F_{\text{alg}}^\times$  and  $\omega_1 \in \Phi$  such that  $\omega b = \omega_1^n$  (Assumption 8.1(b2)). Let  $y \in \tilde{F}^\times$  satisfies  $x = by^n$ . Then  $[x, \omega] = [xb^{-1}, \omega b] = [y, \omega_1]^n$ . ■

LEMMA 9.2:  $\tilde{F}$  and  $\tilde{\Phi}$  satisfy Assumption 8.1.

*Proof:* Since  $\tilde{F} \cap \tilde{\mathbb{Q}} = \tilde{\mathbb{Q}}$  and  $(\tilde{F}^\times)^n = \tilde{F}^\times$  Assumption 8.1(b1) is trivial and (b2) follows from Lemma 9.1. Thus we have only to prove Assumption 8.1(b3).

Let  $[x, \omega] \in \tilde{\Phi}$  with  $[x, \omega]^n = 1$ . Then there exists  $t \in F^\times$  such that  $x^n = t^{-1}$  and  $\omega^n = t$ . By Assumption 8.1(b1), there exist  $a \in F_{\text{alg}}^\times$  and  $s \in F^\times$  such that  $ats^n = 1$ . By Assumption 8.1(b2),  $a \in F_{\text{alg}}^\times \cap \Phi^n = (F_{\text{alg}}^\times)^n$ . Let  $b \in F_{\text{alg}}^\times$  such that  $b^n = a$ . Then  $(\omega sb)^n = 1$  and by Assumption 8.1(b3)  $c = \omega sb \in F_{\text{alg}}^\times$ . Conclude that  $(xs^{-1}b^{-1}c)^n = 1$  and  $[x, \omega] = [xs^{-1}b^{-1}c, \omega sb c^{-1}] = [xs^{-1}b^{-1}c, 1] \in \tilde{F}^\times$ . Since  $[x, \omega]^n = 1$  we have  $[x, \omega] = \tilde{F}_{\text{alg}}^\times$ . ■

We abbreviate  $E \cup \{\infty\} \cup \Phi_E$  by  $\Theta_E$  and write  $\tilde{\Theta}$  for  $\Theta_{\tilde{F}}$ . A  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -site of a field  $L$  is a pair  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$ , where  $\pi: L \rightarrow \tilde{F} \cup \{\infty\}$  is a place and  $\varphi: L^\times \rightarrow \tilde{\Phi}$  is a homomorphism such that  $\varphi(u) = \pi(u)$  for each  $u \in U_\pi$ . For a subfield  $K$  of  $L$ ,  $\text{Res}_K \theta = (\text{Res}_K(\pi), \text{Res}_{K^\times}(\varphi))$  is a  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -site of  $K$ . Write  $\theta(L) \subseteq \Theta$  if  $\pi(L) \subseteq F \cup \{\infty\}$  and  $\varphi(L^\times) \subseteq \Phi$ . In this case  $\text{Res}_K \theta$  is a  $\Theta$ -site of  $K$ . Lemma 9.2 implies that the results of Section 8 except Proposition 8.9 may be applied to  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -sites.

**PROPOSITION 9.3:** *Let  $\theta_0$  be a  $\Theta$ -site of a field  $K$  and let  $L$  be a Galois extension of  $K$ . Then*

- (a)  $\theta_0$  extends to a  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -site  $\theta$  of  $L$ ;
- (b) if another  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -site  $\theta'$  of  $L$  extends  $\theta_0$ , then there exists a unique  $\sigma \in \mathcal{G}(L/K)$  such that  $\theta = \theta' \circ \sigma$ .

*Proof:* Consider  $\theta_0$  as a  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -site. Use Lemma 9.2 and apply Proposition 8.7 on  $(K, \theta_0)$  to obtain a  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -closure  $(\bar{K}, \bar{\theta})$ , with  $\bar{\theta} = (\bar{\pi}, \bar{\varphi})$ . In particular  $(\bar{K}, \bar{\pi})$  is  $\tilde{F}$ -closed (Lemma 8.6). Hence  $\bar{K} = \tilde{K}$ . Then  $\theta = \text{Res}_L \bar{\theta}$  is an extension of  $\theta_0$  to  $L$ . This proves (a).

To prove (b) extend  $\theta'$  as above to a  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -site  $\bar{\theta}'$  of  $\tilde{K}$ . By Proposition 8.7 there exists a unique  $\tau \in G(K)$  such that  $\bar{\theta} = \bar{\theta}' \circ \tau$ . Hence  $\theta = \theta' \circ \text{Res}_L \tau$ . ■

Define an action of  $G(F)$  on  $\tilde{\Phi}$ :

$$g[x, \omega] = [g(x), \omega], \quad g \in G(F), \quad x \in \tilde{F}^\times \quad \text{and} \quad \omega \in \Phi.$$

If  $E$  is an algebraic extension of  $F$  and  $[x, \omega] \in \tilde{\Phi}$  is fixed under the action of  $G(E)$ , then for each  $g \in G(E)$  there exists  $a \in F^\times$  such that  $(g(x), \omega) = (x, \omega)(a^{-1}, a)$ . Hence

$a = 1$  and  $g(x) = x$ . Thus  $\Phi_E$  is the fixed subgroup of  $\tilde{\Phi}$  under  $G(E)$ . Since  $G(F)$  acts on  $\tilde{F}$ , this defines an action of  $G(F)$  on  $\tilde{\Theta}$ . The fixed subset of  $\tilde{\Theta}$  under  $G(E)$  is  $\Theta_E$ . For a  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -site  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$  of a field  $L$  and  $g \in G(F)$  we define  $g \circ \theta$  to be  $(g \circ \pi, g \circ \varphi)$ . Then  $g \circ \theta$  is also a  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -site of  $L$ . Also, for  $x \in L^\times$ , we write  $\theta(x)$  for  $(\pi(x), \varphi(x))$ .

DEFINITION 9.4: Let  $L/K$  be a Galois extension and  $\theta$  a  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -site of  $L$  such that  $\theta(K) \subseteq \Theta$ . For each  $g \in G(F)$  we have  $\text{Res}_K(g \circ \theta) = \text{Res}_K(\theta)$ . Thus Proposition 9.3(b) gives a unique element  $d_\theta(g) \in \mathcal{G}(L/K)$  such that  $g \circ \theta = \theta \circ d_\theta(g)$ . We call  $D(\theta) = \{d_\theta(g) \mid g \in G(F)\}$  the **decomposition group** of  $\theta$ . The fixed field in  $L$  of  $D(\theta)$  is the **decomposition field** of  $\theta$ .

LEMMA 9.5: Let  $L/K$  be a Galois extension and let  $\theta$  be a  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -site of  $L$  such that  $\theta(K) \subseteq \Theta$ .

- (a) If  $L'/K'$  is a Galois extension such that  $K \subseteq K'$  and  $L \subseteq L'$ , and  $\theta'$  is a  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -site of  $L'$  that extends  $\theta$  such that  $\theta'(K') \subseteq \Theta$ , then  $d_\theta(g) = \text{res}_L(d_{\theta'}(g))$  for each  $g \in G(F)$  and therefore  $D(\theta) = \text{res}_L D(\theta')$ .
- (b) The decomposition field  $L_0$  of  $\theta$  (Definition 9.4) is the unique maximal field such that  $K \subseteq L_0 \subseteq L$  and  $\theta(L_0) \subseteq \Theta$ . If  $L = \tilde{K}$ , then  $(L_0, \text{Res}_{L_0} \theta)$  is  $\Theta$ -closed.
- (c) For each finite extension  $K'$  of  $K$  which is contained in  $L$  there exists a finite extension  $F'$  of  $F$  such that  $[F' : F] \leq [K' : K]$  and  $\theta(K') \subseteq \Theta_{F'}$ .
- (d) The map  $d_\theta: G(F) \rightarrow \mathcal{G}(L/K)$  is a continuous homomorphism.
- (e) For each  $\sigma \in \mathcal{G}(L/K)$  and each  $g \in G(F)$  we have  $d_{\theta \circ \sigma}(g) = \sigma^{-1} d_\theta(g) \sigma$ .

*Proof of (a):* Restrict  $g \circ \theta' = \theta' \circ d_{\theta'}(g)$  to  $L$  to obtain  $g \circ \theta = \theta \circ \text{res}_L(d_{\theta'}(g))$ . Conclude that  $\text{res}_L(d_{\theta'}(g)) = d_\theta(g)$ .

*Proof of (b):* If  $x \in L_0^\times$ , then  $g(\theta(x)) = \theta(d_\theta(g)(x)) = \theta(x)$ , for all  $g \in G(F)$ . Hence  $\theta(x) \in \Theta$ . Conversely, let  $M$  be a field between  $K$  and  $L$  such that  $\theta(M) \subseteq \Theta$ . For each  $g \in G(F)$  we have  $\text{Res}_M(\theta \circ d_\theta(g)) = \text{Res}_M(g \circ \theta) = \text{Res}_M(\theta)$ . The existence part of Proposition 9.3(b) for  $L/M$  gives  $\tau \in \mathcal{G}(L/M)$  such that  $\theta \circ d_\theta(g) = \theta \circ \tau$ . The uniqueness part of Proposition 9.3(b) implies that  $d_\theta(g) = \tau$ . It follows that  $\mathcal{G}(L/L_0) \leq \mathcal{G}(L/M)$  and therefore  $M \subseteq L_0$ .

*Proof of (c):* Extend  $\theta$  to a  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -site, also denoted  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$ , of  $\tilde{K}$ . Let  $\overline{K}$  be the decomposition field of  $\theta$ . By (b),  $(\overline{K}, \text{Res}_{\overline{K}}\theta)$  is  $\Theta$ -closed, and by Lemma 8.6,  $(\overline{K}, \text{Res}_{\overline{K}}\pi)$  is  $F$ -closed. In particular  $\text{Res}_{\overline{K}}\pi$  is unramified in  $K'\overline{K}$  (Lemma 7.5(5c)). Let  $F' = \pi(K'\overline{K})$ . Then  $[F' : F] \leq [K'\overline{K} : \overline{K}] \leq [K' : K]$ . By Lemma 8.5,  $\varphi((K')^\times) \subseteq \varphi((K'\overline{K})^\times) \subseteq \varphi(\overline{K}^\times)(F')^\times \subseteq \Phi_{F'}$ . Therefore  $\theta(K') \subseteq \Theta_{F'}$ .

*Proof of (d):* The multiplicativity of  $d_\theta$  is an immediate consequence of the definition of  $d_\theta(g)$ . To prove its continuity let  $K'$  be a finite Galois extension of  $K$  contained in  $L$ . By (c) there exists a finite extension  $F'$  of  $F$  such that  $\theta(K') \subseteq \Theta_{F'}$ . Then for each  $g \in G(F')$  we have  $\theta \circ d_\theta(g) = g \circ \theta = \theta$  on  $K'$ . Apply the uniqueness part of Lemma 9.3 to the extension  $K'/K$  to conclude that  $\text{Res}_{K'}d_\theta(g) = 1$ . Thus  $d_\theta(G(F')) \leq \mathcal{G}(L/K')$ . Conclude that  $d_\theta$  is continuous.

*Proof of (e):* By definition  $\theta \circ \sigma \circ d_{\theta \circ \sigma}(g) = g \circ \theta \circ \sigma = \theta \circ d_\theta(g) \circ \sigma = \theta \circ \sigma \circ \sigma^{-1}d_\theta(g)\sigma$ . The uniqueness of  $d_{\theta \circ \sigma}$  implies  $d_{\theta \circ \sigma} = \sigma^{-1}d_\theta(g)\sigma$ . ■



## 10. The space of sites of a Galois extension.

From now on we consider only the case  $F = \mathbb{Q}_p$  and  $\Phi = \varprojlim \mathbb{Q}_p^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^n$ . Thus  $\Theta = \mathbb{Q}_p \cup \{\infty\} \cup \Phi$  and  $\tilde{\Theta} = \tilde{\mathbb{Q}}_p \cup \{\infty\} \cup \tilde{\Phi}$ . The goal of this section is to associate a  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure  $\mathbf{G}(L/K)$  with each Galois extension  $L/K$ . The space of sites of  $\mathbf{G}(L/K)$  is the collection of all  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -site  $\theta$  of  $L$  such that  $\theta(K) \subseteq \Theta$ . The forgetful map maps  $\theta$  onto  $d_\theta$  (Definition 9.4).

Endow  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}_p^\times$  with the  $p$ -adic (locally compact) topology. Observe that  $\Phi$ , as a profinite group, is compact. Equip  $\tilde{\Phi} = (\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}_p^\times \times \Phi) / \{(a, a^{-1}) \mid a \in \mathbb{Q}_p^\times\}$  with the quotient topology of the product topology of

Then the canonical embeddings of  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}_p^\times$  and  $\Phi$  into  $\tilde{\Phi}$  (Section 9) are continuous. Since the action of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  on  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}_p^\times$  is continuous so is the action of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  on  $\tilde{\Phi}$ .

LEMMA 10.1: *If a topological group  $G$  has an open subgroup  $H$  of finite index and  $H$  is profinite, then so is  $G$ .*

*Proof:*  $G$  is a union of finitely many disjoint cosets modulo  $H$ . Each coset  $gH$  is a Boolean space (Section 1). Therefore so is  $G$ . It follows that  $G$  is a profinite group [R, p. 16]. ■

LEMMA 10.2: *Let  $E$  be a finite extension of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ . Then the subgroup  $\Phi_E$  of  $\tilde{\Phi}$  is profinite.*

*Proof:* Let  $t$  be a prime element of  $E$ ,  $U$  the group of units of  $E$  and  $e$  the ramification index of  $E$  over  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ . Then  $V = \langle t^e \rangle \times U = \langle p \rangle \times U$  is an open subgroup of  $E^\times$  of finite index which contains  $\mathbb{Q}_p^\times$ . By Lemma 10.1 it suffices to prove that  $W = (V \times \Phi) / \{(a, a^{-1}) \mid a \in \mathbb{Q}_p^\times\}$  is profinite. Indeed, use  $\mathbb{Q}_p^\times = \{p^n u \mid n \in \mathbb{Z}, u \in \mathbb{Z}_p^\times\}$  and  $\Phi = \{p^m v \mid m \in \hat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times, v \in \mathbb{Z}_p^\times\}$  to define a continuous open homomorphism  $V \times \Phi \rightarrow \hat{\mathbb{Z}} \times U$  by  $(p^n u, p^m v) \mapsto (p^{n+m}, uv)$ , for  $n \in \mathbb{Z}, u \in U, m \in \hat{\mathbb{Z}}$  and  $v \in \mathbb{Z}_p^\times$ . The kernel is  $\{(a, a^{-1}) \mid a \in \mathbb{Q}_p^\times\}$ . Thus  $W \cong \hat{\mathbb{Z}} \times U$ . Since  $U$  is compact [L2, p.46] so is  $W$ . ■

For a Galois extension  $L/K$  we denote the set of all  $\tilde{\Theta}$ -sites  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$  of  $L$  such that  $\theta(K) \subseteq \Theta$  by  $X(L/K)$ . Since  $\pi: L \rightarrow \tilde{\mathbb{Q}}_p \cup \{\infty\}$  and  $\varphi: L^\times \rightarrow \tilde{\Phi}$  are maps, consider  $X(L/K)$  as a subset of  $Y = (\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}_p \cup \{\infty\})^L \times \tilde{\Phi}^{L^\times}$ . Equip  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}_p \cup \{\infty\}$  with the topology of one point compactification. Then  $Y$  and  $X(L/K)$  are topological spaces.

If  $L'/K'$  is another Galois extension such that  $K \subseteq K'$  and  $L \subseteq L'$ , then the

obvious restriction map  $\text{Res}_{L'/L}: X(L'/K') \rightarrow X(L/K)$  is continuous. Moreover

$$(1) \quad X(L/K) \cong \varprojlim X(L_0/K),$$

where  $L_0/K$  ranges over all finite Galois subextensions of  $L/K$ .

Let  $K \subseteq K' \subseteq L$  and  $\theta \in X(L/K)$ , and suppose that  $D(\theta) \leq \mathcal{G}(L/K')$  (Definition 9.4). Then  $\theta(K') \subseteq \Theta$  (Lemma 9.5(b)). Conclude that

$$(2) \quad X(L/K') = \{\theta \in X(L/K) \mid D(\theta) \leq \mathcal{G}(L/K')\}.$$

LEMMA 10.3: (a) For each Galois extension  $L/K$ ,  $X(L/K)$  is a Boolean space.

(b) The collection of sets

$$(3) \quad \{(\pi, \varphi) \in X(L/K) \mid \varphi(y) \in V\},$$

where  $y$  ranges over  $L^\times$  and  $V$  ranges through a basis of  $\tilde{\Phi}$ , is a subbasis for the topology of  $X(L/K)$ .

*Proof of (a):* By (1), it suffices to consider the case where  $L/K$  is finite. Denote the compositum of all extensions of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  of degree  $\leq [L : K]$  by  $E$ . It is a finite extension of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  (Proposition 6.5). By Lemma 9.5(c),  $\theta(L) \subseteq \Theta_E$  for each  $\theta \in X(L/K)$ . Thus  $X(L/K)$  is a subspace of  $Y_E = (E \cup \{\infty\})^L \times \Phi_E^{L^\times}$ . Since generalized addition and multiplication in  $E \cup \{\infty\}$  are continuous,  $X(L/K)$  is closed in  $Y_E$ . As  $E$  is a locally compact totally disconnected Hausdorff space,  $E \cup \{\infty\}$  is Boolean. By Lemma 10.2, so is  $\Phi_E$ . Hence the product space  $Y_E$  is Boolean and therefore so is  $X(L/K)$ .

*Proof of (b):* The map  $(\pi, \varphi) \mapsto \varphi$  of  $X(L/K)$  into  $\tilde{\Phi}^{L^\times}$  is injective, by Lemma 8.8(b). By (a) it is a homomorphism of  $X(L/K)$  onto its image in  $\tilde{\Phi}^{L^\times}$ . ■

If  $L/K$  is a finite extension,  $E$  is the compositum of all finite extensions of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  of degree at most  $[L : K]$ , then  $\theta(L^\times) \subseteq \Theta_E$  for each  $\theta \in X(L/K)$  (Lemma 9.5(c)). Hence, in order to get a subbasis of  $X(L/K)$ , it suffices to allow  $V$  in (3) to run through a basis of  $\Phi_E$ .

REMARK 10.4: *The action of  $\mathcal{G}(L/K)$  on  $X(L/K)$ .* Define the action of  $\mathcal{G}(L/K)$  on  $X(L/K)$  by  $\theta^\sigma = \theta \circ \sigma$ . Each  $\sigma \in \mathcal{G}(L/K)$  maps the set (3) onto the set

$$\{(\pi, \varphi) \in X(L/K) \mid \varphi(\sigma^{-1}V) \in V\}.$$

Moreover  $\theta \circ \sigma = \theta$  implies  $\sigma = 1$  (Proposition 9.3(b)). Hence this action is continuous and regular and  $(X(L/K), \mathcal{G}(L/K))$  is a profinite transformation group (Lemma 10.3). If  $L'/K'$  is another Galois extension such that  $K \subseteq K'$  and  $L \subseteq L'$ , then  $\text{Res}_{L'/L}: (X(L'/K'), \mathcal{G}(L'/K')) \rightarrow (X(L/K), \mathcal{G}(L/K))$  is a morphism of transformation groups. ■

REMARK 10.5: *The space  $X(K)$ .* We write  $X(K)$  for  $X(K/K)$ , the set of all  $\Theta$ -sites of  $K$ . The subbasis for its topology given by

$$\{(\pi, \varphi) \in X(K) \mid \varphi(a) \equiv \omega \pmod{\Phi^m}\}, \quad a \in K^\times, \omega \in \Phi \text{ and } m \in \mathbb{N},$$

(Lemma 10.3(b)) consists of open-closed sets.

By Lemma 10.3(a) each open-closed subset  $H$  of  $X(K)$  is compact. Hence it is a finite union of finite intersections of subbasis sets

$$(4) \quad H = \bigcup_{i=1}^k \bigcap_{j=1}^{l(i)} \{(\pi, \varphi) \in X(K) \mid \varphi(a_{ij}) \equiv \omega_{ij} \pmod{\Phi^{m_{ij}}}\}$$

with  $a_{ij} \in K^\times$ ,  $\omega_{ij} \in \Phi$  and  $m_{ij} \in \mathbb{N}$ . Let  $m$  be a common multiple of all  $m_{ij}$ 's. Since  $\Phi^{m_{ij}}/\Phi^m \cong (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^{m_{ij}}/(\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^m$  is finite, we may enlarge each  $l(i)$ , if necessary, to assume that  $m_{ij} = m$  for each  $i$  and  $j$ . Lemma 6.8 gives  $b_{ij} \in \mathbb{Q}^\times$  such that  $b_{ij} \equiv \omega_{ij} \pmod{\Phi^m}$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, k$  and  $j = 1, \dots, l(i)$ . Then  $\varphi(b_{ij}) = \pi(b_{ij}) = b_{ij}$ . Replace  $a_{ij}$  by  $b_{ij}^{-1}a_{ij}$  if necessary and use De-Morgan laws to change the order of the union and intersection in (4) and add trivial conditions if necessary like  $\varphi(1) \in \Phi^m$  to represent  $H$  as

$$H = \bigcap_{i=1}^r \bigcup_{j=1}^n \{(\pi, \varphi) \in X(K) \mid \varphi(a_{ij}) \in \Phi^m\}. \quad \blacksquare$$

Again, let  $L/K$  be a Galois extension. Define a map

$$d: X(L/K) \rightarrow \text{Hom}(G(\mathbb{Q}_p), \mathcal{G}(L/K))$$

by  $d(\theta) = d_\theta$ , where  $d_\theta: \Gamma \rightarrow \mathcal{G}(L/K)$  is the unique homomorphism for which  $\theta \circ d_\theta(g) = g \circ \theta$  for every  $g \in G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  (Definition 9.4). For each  $\sigma \in \mathcal{G}(L/K)$

$$\theta^\sigma \circ d_{\theta^\sigma}(g) = g \circ \theta^\sigma = g \circ \theta \circ \sigma = \theta \circ \sigma \circ \sigma^{-1} \circ d_\theta(g) \circ \sigma = \theta^\sigma \circ d_\theta(g)^\sigma.$$

Hence  $d(\theta)^\sigma = d(\theta^\sigma)$ . Continuity of  $d$  is a consequence of the next result which is a version of Krasner's lemma.

LEMMA 10.6: *Let  $L/K$  be a finite Galois extension and let  $\theta \in X(L/K)$ . Then  $\theta$  has an open neighborhood  $V_\theta$  such that  $d_\theta = d_{\theta'}$  for each  $\theta' \in V_\theta$ .*

*Proof:* We first fix an element  $g \in G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  and construct an open neighborhood  $V_{\theta,g}$  of  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$  such that  $d_\theta(g) = d_{\theta'}(g)$  for each  $\theta' \in V_{\theta,g}$ .

Indeed let  $\sigma = d_\theta(g)$ . Let  $\tau \in \mathcal{G}(L/K)$ ,  $\tau \neq \sigma$ . Proposition 9.3(b) implies that  $\theta \circ \tau \neq \theta \circ \sigma$ . Hence  $\varphi \circ \tau \neq \varphi \circ \sigma$  (Lemma 8.8(b)). Choose  $a_\tau \in L^\times$  such that  $(\varphi \circ \tau)(a_\tau) \neq (\varphi \circ \sigma)(a_\tau)$ .

Let  $E$  be the compositum of all finite extensions of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  of degree at most  $[L : K]$ .  $E$  is a finite extension of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  (Proposition 6.5) and  $\varphi'(L^\times) \subseteq \Phi_E$  for each  $(\pi', \varphi') \in X(L/K)$  (Lemma 9.5(c)).

Since  $L/K$  is finite and  $\Phi_E$  is profinite (Lemma 10.2)  $\Phi_E$  has an open subgroup  $U$  such that

$$(9) \quad (\varphi \circ \tau)(a_\tau) \not\equiv (\varphi \circ \sigma)(a_\tau) \pmod{U} \quad \text{for each } \tau \in \mathcal{G}(L/K), \tau \neq \sigma.$$

Replace  $U$ , if necessary, by  $\bigcap_{h \in \mathcal{G}(E/\mathbb{Q}_p)} h(U)$  to assume that  $g(U) = U$ .

Now define  $V_{\theta,g}$  to be the set of all  $\theta' = (\pi', \varphi') \in X(L/K)$  such that

$$(10) \quad (\varphi' \circ \kappa)(a_\tau) \equiv (\varphi \circ \kappa)(a_\tau) \pmod{U} \quad \text{for all } \kappa, \tau \in \mathcal{G}(L/K).$$

It is an open neighborhood of  $\theta$ . In particular, for  $\kappa = 1$ ,  $\varphi'(a_\tau) \equiv \varphi(a_\tau) \pmod{U}$ , and therefore  $(g \circ \varphi')(a_\tau) \equiv (g \circ \varphi)(a_\tau) \pmod{U}$  for all  $\tau \in \mathcal{G}(L/K)$ . Thus

$$(11) \quad (\varphi' \circ d_{\theta'}(g))(a_\tau) \equiv (\varphi \circ \sigma)(a_\tau) \pmod{U} \quad \text{for every } \tau \in \mathcal{G}(L/K).$$

Substitute  $\kappa = d_{\theta'}(g)$  in (10) to obtain

$$(12) \quad (\varphi' \circ d_{\theta'}(g))(a_\tau) \equiv (\varphi \circ d_{\theta'}(g))(a_\tau) \pmod{U} \quad \text{for every } \tau \in \mathcal{G}(L/K).$$

It follows from (11) and (12) that

$$(13) \quad (\varphi \circ d_{\theta'}(g))(a_\tau) \equiv (\varphi \circ \sigma)(a_\tau) \pmod{U} \quad \text{for every } \tau \in \mathcal{G}(L/K).$$

Thus (9) and (13) imply that  $d_{\theta'}(g) = \sigma = d_\theta(g)$ .

Finally let  $V_\theta = \bigcap_g V_{\theta,g}$ , where  $g$  ranges over a finite set  $G_0$  of generators of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  (Proposition 6.5). Then  $V_\theta$  is an open neighborhood of  $\theta$  such that for each  $\theta' \in V_\theta$  and each  $g \in G_0$  we have  $d_\theta(g) = d_{\theta'}(g)$ . Since  $d_\theta$  and  $d_{\theta'}$  are continuous homomorphisms (Lemma 9.5(d))  $d_\theta = d_{\theta'}$ . ■

PROPOSITION 10.7: Let  $L/K$  be a Galois extension. Then

- (a)  $\mathbf{G}(L/K) = \langle \mathcal{G}(L/K), X(L/K), d \rangle$  is a  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure;
- (b) if  $L_0/K_0$  is a Galois extension such that  $K_0 \subseteq K$  and  $L_0 \subseteq L$ , then

$$\text{Res}_{L/L_0}: \mathbf{G}(L/K) \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(L_0/K_0)$$

is a morphism of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structures;

- (c) in particular if  $K_0 = K$ , then  $\text{Res}_{L/L_0}$  is a cover of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structures.

*Proof:* By Lemma 9.5(a) and in the notation of (b), the following diagram commutes:

$$(10) \quad \begin{array}{ccc} X(L/K) & \xrightarrow{d} & \text{Hom}(G(\mathbb{Q}_p), \mathcal{G}(L/K)) \\ \text{Res}_{L/L_0} \downarrow & & \downarrow \text{Res}_{L/L_0} \\ X(L_0/K_0) & \xrightarrow{d} & \text{Hom}(G(\mathbb{Q}_p), \mathcal{G}(L_0/K_0)) \end{array}$$

Since  $X(L/K) = \varprojlim X(L_0/K)$  (by (1)) and

$$\text{Hom}(G(\mathbb{Q}_p), \mathcal{G}(L/K)) = \varprojlim \text{Hom}(G(\mathbb{Q}_p), \mathcal{G}(L_0/K))$$

where  $L_0/K$  ranges over all finite Galois subextensions of  $L/K$  (Section (1)), the map  $d: X(L/K) \rightarrow \text{Hom}(G(\mathbb{Q}_p), \mathcal{G}(L/K))$  is the inverse limit of the maps  $d: X(L_0/K) \rightarrow \text{Hom}(G(\mathbb{Q}_p), \mathcal{G}(L_0/K))$ . By Lemma 10.6,  $d$  is continuous. Combine this with Remark 10.4 to conclude that  $\mathbf{G}(L/K)$  is a  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure. Similarly conclude (b). Assertion (c) follows from Proposition 9.3. ■

If  $L = \tilde{K}$  we write  $\mathbf{G}(K)$  for  $\mathbf{G}(\tilde{K}/K)$  and call  $\mathbf{G}(K)$  the **absolute**  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure of  $K$ .

LEMMA 10.8: Let  $K$  be a field and let  $\theta, \theta' \in X(\tilde{K}/K)$ . Denote the decomposition field of  $\theta$  (resp.,  $\theta'$ ) by  $M$  (resp.,  $M'$ ). Then

- (a)  $M$  is  $p$ -adically closed;
- (b) the map  $d_\theta: G(\mathbb{Q}_p) \rightarrow G(K)$  is injective,  $M\tilde{\mathbb{Q}} = \tilde{M}$  and  $G(M) \cong G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ ;
- (c)  $M = M'$  if and only if there exists  $\sigma \in G(M)$  such that  $\theta' = \theta \circ \sigma$ ;
- (d) the forgetful map  $d: X(\tilde{K}/K) \rightarrow \text{Hom}(G(\mathbb{Q}_p), G(K))$  of  $\mathbf{G}(K)$  is injective; and
- (e) every  $p$ -adically closed field  $L$ , with  $K \subseteq L \subseteq \tilde{K}$  is the decomposition field of some  $\theta \in X(\tilde{K}/K)$ .

*Proof of (a):* Combine Lemma 8.6 with Lemma 9.5(c). By Lemma 9.5(b),  $(M, \text{Res}_M \theta)$  is  $\Theta$ -closed. Hence, with  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi)$ ,  $(M, \text{Res}_M \pi)$  is  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ -closed. That is,  $M$  is  $p$ -adically closed (Remark 7.4).

*Proof of (b):* By (a) and Corollary 6.6,  $G(M) \cong G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  and  $M\tilde{\mathbb{Q}} = \tilde{M}$ . Since  $d_\theta: G(\mathbb{Q}_p) \rightarrow G(M)$  is surjective and  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  is finitely generated (Proposition 6.5),  $d_\theta$  is injective.

*Proof of (c):* If  $M = M'$ , then, by (3),  $\theta, \theta' \in X(\tilde{K}/M)$ . By (a) and Proposition 8.9,  $\text{res}_M \theta = \text{res}_M \theta'$ . Hence, by Proposition 9.3(b), there exists  $\sigma \in G(M)$  such that  $\theta' = \theta \circ \sigma$ . Conversely, if the latter condition holds, then  $d_{\theta'}(g) = \sigma^{-1} d_\theta(g) \sigma$  for each  $g \in G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  (Lemma 9.5(e)). Hence  $M = M'$ .

*Proof of (d):* If  $d_{\theta'} = d_\theta$ , then, from the proof of (c),  $\sigma$  belongs to the center of  $G(M)$ . Since the latter is trivial ((b) and Proposition 6.5)  $\sigma = 1$ . Thus  $\theta' = \theta$ .

*Proof of (e):* By Proposition 8.9,  $L$  has a (unique)  $\Theta$ -site  $\theta_0$ . Let  $\theta \in X(\tilde{K}/L) \subseteq X(\tilde{K}/K)$  be an extension of  $\theta_0$  (Proposition 9.3(a)). Since  $(L, \theta_0)$  is  $\Theta$ -closed,  $L$  is the decomposition field of  $\theta$  (Lemma 9.5(b)). ■

## 11. Characterization of $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$ by a large quotient of $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ .

*J. Neukirch* proves in [N2] that if  $K$  is an algebraic extension of  $\mathbb{Q}$  and  $G(K) \cong G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ , then  $K \cong \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$ . The main result of this section generalizes this to the case where  $G(K)$  is a priori only a quotient of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  which maps surjectively onto a “large” finite quotient of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ . Throughout this section we use  $l$  (resp.,  $p$ ) to denote a prime number and  $\zeta_l$  (resp.,  $\zeta_p$ ) to denote primitive  $l$ th (resp.,  $p$ th) root of unity.

For a prime  $l$  and a profinite group  $G$  denote the maximal pro- $l$  quotient of  $G$  by  $G(l)$  and let  $\text{rank}_l G = \text{rank}(G(l)) = \dim_{\mathbb{F}_l} \text{Hom}(G, \mathbb{Z}/l\mathbb{Z})$ .

LEMMA 11.1: *Every finitely generated profinite group  $G$  has an open normal subgroup  $G_0$  such that  $G/G_0$  is an  $l$ -group and for each open normal subgroup  $N$  of  $G$  contained in  $G_0$ ,  $\text{rank}_l G/N = \text{rank}_l G$ .*

*Proof:* There are only finitely many homomorphisms of  $G$  into  $\mathbb{Z}/l\mathbb{Z}$ . Take  $G_0$  to be the intersection of the kernels of these homomorphisms. ■

LEMMA 11.2: *Let  $G$  be a finitely generated profinite group. Suppose that  $G(l)$  is not a free pro- $l$ -group. Then  $G$  has an open normal subgroup  $G_0$  with  $G/G_0$  an  $l$ -group such that if  $G_1$  is a closed normal subgroup of  $G$  and  $G_1 \leq G_0$ , then  $G/G_1$  is not a free pro- $l$ -group.*

*Proof:* Choose  $G_0$  such that  $G/G_0$  is an  $l$ -group and  $\text{rank}(G/G_0) = \text{rank}(G(l))$  (Lemma 11.1). Let  $G_1 \leq G_0$  be a closed normal subgroup of  $G$ . If  $G/G_1$  is a free pro- $l$ -group, then it is a quotient of  $G(l)$ , on one hand, and has  $G/G_0$  as a quotient on the other hand. Hence  $\text{rank}(G/G_1) = \text{rank}(G(l))$ . Conclude that  $G(l)$  is also a free pro- $l$ -group [R, p. 69], a contradiction. ■

The  $l$ -ranks are well known for  $G = G(E)$ , where  $E$  is an algebraic extension of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  such that  $l^\infty \nmid [E : \mathbb{Q}_p]$  [N2, Satz 4]:

$$(1) \quad \text{rank}_l G(E) = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } l \neq p \text{ and } \zeta_l \notin E \\ 2 & \text{if } l \neq p \text{ and } \zeta_l \in E \\ 1 + [E : \mathbb{Q}_p] & \text{if } l = p \text{ and } \zeta_p \notin E \\ 2 + [E : \mathbb{Q}_p] & \text{if } l = p \text{ and } \zeta_p \in E. \end{cases}$$

In what follows we denote the Brauer group of a field  $L$  by  $\text{Br}(L) = H^2(G(L), L_s^\times)$ .

Let  $\text{Br}(L)_l = \{a \in \text{Br}(L) \mid la = 0\}$  be its  $l$ th torsion part. All groups are assumed to operate trivially on  $\mathbb{Z}/l\mathbb{Z}$ .

LEMMA 11.3: Let  $L$  be an algebraic extension of  $\mathbb{Q}$  which contains  $\zeta_l$  (resp.,  $\sqrt{-1} \in L$  if  $l = 2$ ). If  $\text{Br}(L)_l \neq 0$ , then  $\text{Br}(L')_l \neq 0$  for each finite extension  $L'$  of  $L$ .

*Proof:* Consider the following short exact sequence

$$1 \longrightarrow U_l \longrightarrow \tilde{\mathbb{Q}}^\times \xrightarrow{l} \tilde{\mathbb{Q}}^\times \longrightarrow 1,$$

where  $l$  means raising to the  $l$ th power. It induces a four term exact sequence,

$$(2) \quad H^1(G(L), \tilde{\mathbb{Q}}^\times) \longrightarrow H^2(G(L), U_l) \longrightarrow H^2(G(L), \tilde{\mathbb{Q}}^\times) \xrightarrow{l} H^2(G(L), \tilde{\mathbb{Q}}^\times).$$

By Hilbert's Theorem 90 the first term of (2) is trivial. Since  $U_l \subseteq L$ , the second term is isomorphic to  $H^2(G(L), \mathbb{Z}/l\mathbb{Z})$ . Thus, (2) turns to be

$$0 \longrightarrow H^2(G(L), \mathbb{Z}/l\mathbb{Z}) \longrightarrow \text{Br}(L) \xrightarrow{l} \text{Br}(L).$$

It follows that

$$(3) \quad \text{Br}(L)_l \cong H^2(G(L), \mathbb{Z}/l\mathbb{Z}).$$

Consider now the induced module  $A = \text{Ind}_{G(L')}^{G(L)} \mathbb{Z}/l\mathbb{Z}$  and an appropriate short exact sequence

$$1 \longrightarrow A_1 \longrightarrow A \xrightarrow{\pi} \mathbb{Z}/l\mathbb{Z} \longrightarrow 0$$

of trivial  $G(L)$ -modules. It induces an exact sequence of cohomology groups

$$H^2(G(L), A) \xrightarrow{\bar{\pi}} H^2(G(L), \mathbb{Z}/l\mathbb{Z}) \longrightarrow H^3(G(L), A_1).$$

Since  $\text{cd}_l L \leq 2$  [R, p. 303], the right term in this sequence is 0. Therefore  $\bar{\pi}$  is surjective. Hence, by (3),  $H^2(G(L), A) \neq 0$ . By Shapiro's lemma [R, p. 146],  $H^2(G(L), A) \cong H^2(G(L'), \mathbb{Z}/l\mathbb{Z})$ . Conclude from (3), with  $L'$  replacing  $L$ , that  $\text{Br}(L')_l \neq 0$ . ■

LEMMA 11.4 (F.K. Schmidt): (a) A field  $K$  which is not separably closed can be Henselian with respect to at most one 1-rank valuation.



- (b) Let  $L/K$  be a Galois extension of fields. If  $L$  is Henselian with respect to a rank-1 valuation  $v$  and  $L$  is not separably closed, then  $K$  is Henselian with respect to  $\text{Res}_K v$ .

*Proof:* See Engler [En, pp. 5 and 7] for a generalization to higher rank valuations. ■

PROPOSITION 11.5: For each prime  $p$  there exists a finite Galois extension  $E$  of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  with this property: if  $K$  is an algebraic extension of  $\mathbb{Q}$  and there exist epimorphisms  $\varphi: G(\mathbb{Q}_p) \rightarrow G(K)$  and  $\psi: G(K) \rightarrow \mathcal{G}(E/\mathbb{Q}_p)$ , then  $K \cong \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$ .

*Proof:* Choose a prime  $p' \notin \{2, 3, p\}$  and let  $S = \{p, p'\}$ . Denote the compositum of all extensions of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  with degree at most  $\max\{p-1, p'-1\}$  by  $E_0$ . This is a finite Galois extension of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ . Since  $[\mathbb{Q}_p(\zeta_l) : \mathbb{Q}_p] \leq l-1$ , it contains  $\zeta_l$  for each  $l \in S$ .

By Proposition 6.5 and Lemma 11.1,  $E_0$  has a finite extension  $E_1$  such that for each  $l \in S$  and for each Galois extension  $E'_1$  of  $E_0$  which contains  $E_1$

$$(4) \quad \text{rank}_l \mathcal{G}(E'_1/E_0) = \text{rank}_l G(E_0).$$

Since for each  $l \in S$ ,  $\zeta_l \in E_0$ , the maximal  $l$ -quotient of  $G(E_0)$  is not  $l$ -free [Se, p. II-30]. Therefore, by Lemma 11.2,  $E_0$  has a proper finite Galois  $l$ -extension  $E_l$  such that for each Galois extension  $E'_l$  of  $E_0$  which contains  $E_l$  the group  $\mathcal{G}(E'_l/E_0)$  is not a free pro- $l$ -group.

Let  $E$  be the compositum of all finite extensions of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  of degree at most  $m = \max\{[E_1 : \mathbb{Q}_p], [E_p : \mathbb{Q}_p], [E_{p'} : \mathbb{Q}_p]\}$ . It is a finite Galois extension of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ . Let  $K$  be as in the theorem and denote the fixed field in  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}_p$  of  $\text{Ker}(\varphi)$  by  $N$ . Then  $\mathcal{G}(N/\mathbb{Q}_p) \cong G(K)$ . Also, for the fixed field  $E'$  of  $\text{Ker}(\psi \circ \varphi)$ , we have  $\mathcal{G}(E'/\mathbb{Q}_p) \cong \mathcal{G}(E/\mathbb{Q}_p)$ . Therefore  $E'$  is a compositum of extensions of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  of degree at most  $m$ . Hence  $E' \subseteq E$ . Since both fields have the same degree over  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ ,  $E' = E$ . Thus, since  $\text{Ker}(\varphi) \leq \text{Ker}(\psi \circ \varphi)$ , we have  $E \subseteq N$ . We prove in two parts that  $K \cong \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$ .

PART A:  $K$  is a Henselian field. By construction, each  $l \in S$  divides  $[N : E_0]$ . Let  $E_0^{(l)}$  be the maximal  $l$ -extension of  $E_0$ . Then  $E_l \subseteq N \cap E_0^{(l)}$ . Hence, the maximal pro- $l$  quotient  $\mathcal{G}(N \cap E_0^{(l)}/E_0)$  of  $\mathcal{G}(N/E_0)$ , is not  $l$ -free. It follows [R, p. 255] that

$$(5) \quad \text{cd}_l \mathcal{G}(N/E_0) > 1.$$

Let  $L_0$  be the fixed field in  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}$  of  $\varphi(G(E_0))$ . It is a finite Galois extension of  $K$ ,  $G(L_0) \cong \mathcal{G}(N/E_0)$  and  $\mathcal{G}(E_0/\mathbb{Q}_p) \cong \mathcal{G}(L_0/K)$ . In particular  $L_0$  contains every finite extension of  $K$  of degree  $\leq l - 1$ . Since  $[K(\zeta_l) : K] \leq l - 1$ , we have  $\zeta_l \in L_0$ . Since  $p' - 1 \geq 2$ , we have  $\sqrt{-1} \in L_0$ . By (5),  $\text{cd}_l G(L_0) > 1$ . Hence [R, p. 261]  $L_0$  has a finite extension  $L_l$  such that

$$(6) \quad \text{Br}(L_l)_l \neq 0.$$

Let  $L_1$  be a finite Galois extension of  $K$  that contains both  $L_p$  and  $L_{p'}$ . By Lemma 11.3,  $\text{Br}(L_1)_l \neq 0$  for  $l = p, p'$ . Also, since  $G(L_1)$  is isomorphic to a subgroup of  $\mathcal{G}(N/\mathbb{Q}_p)$ ,  $G(L_1)$  is prosolvable. Thus, Neukirch's Satz 1 of [N1] asserts that  $L_1$  is Henselian. Now apply Lemma 11.4 to the Galois extension  $L_1/K$  and conclude that  $K$  is Henselian.

PART B:  $K \cong \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$ . Denote the characteristic of the residue field of  $K$  with respect to its Henselian valuation by  $q$ . Then  $K$  contains an isomorphic copy of  $\mathbb{Q}_{q,\text{alg}}$ . Assume without loss that  $\mathbb{Q}_{q,\text{alg}} \subseteq K$ . By (6),  $\text{Br}(L_p)_p \neq 0$ . Hence  $p^\infty \nmid [L_p : \mathbb{Q}_{q,\text{alg}}]$  [R, p. 291] and therefore

$$(7) \quad p^\infty \nmid [L_0 : \mathbb{Q}_{q,\text{alg}}].$$

On one hand (4) and (1) give

$$(8) \quad \text{rank}_p G(L_0) = \text{rank}_p \mathcal{G}(N/E_0) = \text{rank}_p G(E_0) = 2 + [E_0 : \mathbb{Q}_p].$$

On the other hand (1) implies

$$(9) \quad \text{rank}_p G(L_0) = \begin{cases} 2 & \text{if } p \neq q \\ 2 + [L_0 : \mathbb{Q}_{q,\text{alg}}] & \text{if } p = q. \end{cases}$$

Clearly, (8) and (9) can be reconciled only if  $p = q$  and  $[E_0 : \mathbb{Q}_p] = [L_0 : \mathbb{Q}_{q,\text{alg}}]$ . But  $[E_0 : \mathbb{Q}_p] = [L_0 : K]$ , so necessarily  $K = \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$ . ■

## 12. Pseudo $p$ -adically closed fields.

We call a field extension  $E/K$  **totally  $p$ -adic** if the map  $\text{Res}_{E/K}: X(E) \rightarrow X(K)$  (Section 10) is surjective.

LEMMA 12.1:

- (a) A regular extension  $E/K$  is totally  $p$ -adic if and only if the  $\text{Res}_{\tilde{E}/\tilde{K}}: X(\tilde{E}/E) \rightarrow X(\tilde{K}/K)$  is a surjective map.
- (b) A regular extension  $E/K$  is totally  $p$ -adic if and only if for each  $p$ -adic closure  $\bar{K}$  of  $K$ ,  $\bar{K}E/\bar{K}$  is totally  $p$ -adic.
- (c) Let  $V$  be an absolutely irreducible variety defined over  $K$  and let  $E$  be its function field. Then  $E/K$  is totally  $p$ -adic if and only if  $V_{\text{sim}}(\bar{K}) \neq \emptyset$  for each  $p$ -adic closure  $\bar{K}$  of  $K$ .

*Proof of (a):* Suppose that  $\text{Res}_{E/K}: X(E) \rightarrow X(K)$  is surjective. Let  $\tilde{\theta} \in X(\tilde{K}/K)$ . Take  $\theta_1 \in X(E)$  that extends  $\theta = \text{Res}_{\tilde{K}/K}\tilde{\theta}$  and extend it to  $\theta'_1 \in X(\tilde{E}/E)$  (Proposition 9.3(a)). Let  $\theta' = \text{Res}_{\tilde{E}/\tilde{K}}\theta'_1$ . Since  $\text{Res}_{\tilde{K}/K}\tilde{\theta} = \text{Res}_{\tilde{K}/K}\theta'$  Proposition 9.3(b) gives  $\sigma \in G(K)$  such that  $\theta' = \tilde{\theta}^\sigma$ . Since  $E/K$  is regular  $\sigma$  extends to  $\tau \in G(E)$ . Then  $\tilde{\theta}_1 = (\theta'_1)^{\tau^{-1}} \in X(\tilde{E}/E)$  and extends  $\tilde{\theta}$ . Thus  $\text{Res}_{\tilde{E}/\tilde{K}}: X(\tilde{E}/E) \rightarrow X(\tilde{K}/K)$  is surjective. The converse is trivial.

*Proof of (b):* We use (a). Suppose first that  $E/K$  is totally  $p$ -adic, let  $\bar{K}$  be a  $p$ -adic closure of  $K$  and let  $\theta \in X(\tilde{K}/\bar{K})$ . Extend  $\theta$  to  $\theta' \in X(\tilde{E}/E)$ . Then  $\text{Res}_{\tilde{K}}D(\theta') = D(\theta) \leq G(\bar{K})$  (Lemma 9.5(a)). Hence  $D(\theta') \leq G(\bar{K}E)$ . By (3) of section 10,  $\theta' \in X(\bar{K}E/\bar{K})$ .

The converse holds, since each  $\theta \in X(\tilde{K}/K)$  belongs to  $X(\tilde{K}/\bar{K})$ , where  $\bar{K}$  is the decomposition field of  $\theta$ .

*Proof of (c):* By (b) we may assume that  $K$  is  $p$ -adically closed. Suppose first that  $V_{\text{sim}}(K) \neq \emptyset$ . Let  $(\pi, \varphi)$  be the unique  $\Theta$ -site of  $K$  (Proposition 8.9). Then  $\pi$  extends to a  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ -place  $\pi'$  of  $E$  (Proposition 6.4(c) and Lemma 6.7). By Corollary 8.10,  $E$  has a  $\Theta$ -site  $(\pi', \varphi')$ . Since  $(\pi, \text{Res}_{E/K}(\varphi'))$  is a  $\Theta$ -site of  $K$ , the uniqueness of  $\bar{\varphi}$  implies that  $\varphi = \text{Res}_{E/K}(\varphi')$ . Conversely, if  $(\pi, \varphi)$  extends to a  $\Theta$ -site of  $E$ , then Proposition 6.4(c) implies that  $V_{\text{sim}}(K) \neq \emptyset$ . ■

DEFINITION 12.2: We call a field  $K$  of characteristic 0 **pseudo  $p$ -adically closed** (PpC) if every absolutely irreducible variety  $V$  defined over  $K$  has a  $K$ -rational point, provided that the function field of  $V$  is totally  $p$ -adic over  $K$  (i.e.,  $V_{\text{sim}}(\overline{K}) \neq \emptyset$  for every  $p$ -adic closure  $\overline{K}$  of  $K$ ).

Note that we do not assume that  $K$  has a  $p$ -adic valuation; a PpC with no  $p$ -adic valuation is pseudo algebraically closed.

We shall construct a class of PpC fields contained in  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}$  with finitely many  $p$ -adic valuations. Since the  $p$ -adic closure of a formally  $p$ -adic number field is its Henselization, i.e., an isomorphic copy of  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$ , we may use the results of Heinemann and Prestel [HP] to simplify the definition of algebraic PpC fields.

LEMMA 12.3: *let  $K$  be a subfield of  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}$  and let  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_1}, \dots, \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_e}$  be  $p$ -adic closures of  $K$ . Suppose that every absolutely irreducible polynomial  $f \in K[X, Y]$  has a  $K$ -rational zero, provided that for each  $i$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq e$ , there exist  $a, b \in \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_i}$  such that  $f(a, b) = 0$  and  $\frac{\partial f}{\partial Y}(a, b) \neq 0$ . Then  $K$  is PpC and its only  $p$ -adic valuations are those induced from  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_1}, \dots, \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_e}$ .*

*Proof:* Let  $f \in K[X, Y]$  be an absolutely irreducible polynomial that admits a  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_i}$ -rational simple point for  $i = 1, \dots, e$ . After a linear transformation of the coordinates, we may assume that for each  $i$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq e$ , there exist  $a, b \in \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_i}$  such that  $f(a, b) = 0$  and  $\frac{\partial f}{\partial Y}(a, b) \neq 0$ . By assumption,  $f$  has a  $K$ -rational zero. It follows from [HP, Thm. 1.8] that  $K$  is PpC, and from [HP, Lemma 1.6] that the only  $p$ -adic valuations on  $K$  are those induced from  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_1}, \dots, \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_e}$ . ■

Fix integers  $0 \leq e \leq m$ . For each  $\boldsymbol{\sigma} = (\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_m) \in G(\mathbb{Q})^m$  let

$$\mathbb{Q}_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}} = \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_1} \cap \dots \cap \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_e} \cap \tilde{\mathbb{Q}}(\sigma_{e+1}) \cap \dots \cap \tilde{\mathbb{Q}}(\sigma_m).$$

Also, for  $\boldsymbol{\sigma}, \boldsymbol{\lambda} \in G(\mathbb{Q})^m$  write  $\boldsymbol{\sigma}\boldsymbol{\lambda}$  for  $(\sigma_1\lambda_1, \dots, \sigma_m\lambda_m)$ . In the following result we use the term “almost all” in the sense of the Haar measure of  $G(\mathbb{Q})^m$ .

LEMMA 12.4: *Let  $\boldsymbol{\tau} \in G(\mathbb{Q})^m$  and let  $L \subseteq \mathbb{Q}_{\boldsymbol{\tau}}$  be a finite extension of  $\mathbb{Q}$ . Then almost all  $\boldsymbol{\lambda} \in G(L)^m$  have this property: if  $f \in L[X, Y]$  is an absolutely irreducible polynomial and for each  $1 \leq i \leq e$  there exist  $a_{0i}, b_{0i} \in \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\tau_i}$  such that  $f(a_{0i}, b_{0i}) = 0$  and  $\frac{\partial f}{\partial Y}(a_{0i}, b_{0i}) \neq 0$ , then  $f$  has a  $\mathbb{Q}_{\boldsymbol{\tau}\boldsymbol{\lambda}}$ -rational zero.*

*Proof:* Let  $n = \deg_Y f$ . Without loss assume that for some  $d$  between 1 and  $e$ ,  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\tau_1}, \dots, \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\tau_d}$  represent the  $L$ -isomorphism classes of the set  $\{\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\tau_1}, \dots, \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\tau_e}\}$ . In particular  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\tau_1}, \dots, \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\tau_d}$  induce distinct  $p$ -adic valuations on  $L$ .

Since  $L$  is Hilbertian we may use [G, Lemma 3.4] to inductively find  $a_1, a_2, a_3, \dots \in L$  and  $b_1, b_2, b_3, \dots \in \tilde{\mathbb{Q}}$  such that for each  $j \geq 1$

- (1a)  $a_j$  lies near  $a_{0i}$  in  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\tau_i}, i = 1, \dots, d$ ;
- (1b)  $f(a_j, Y)$  is irreducible over  $L$  of degree  $n$ , and  $f(a_j, b_j) = 0$ ; and
- (1c) for  $L_j = L(b_j)$ , the sequence  $L_1, L_2, L_3, \dots$  is linearly disjoint over  $L$ .

Condition (1a) and  $f(a_{0i}, b_{0i}) = 0$  imply by Krasner's lemma [Ri, p. 190] that  $f(a_j, Y)$  has a root in  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\tau_i}, i = 1, \dots, d$ . By the choice of  $d$  this also holds for  $i = d + 1, \dots, e$ . Thus, by (1b), there exist  $\lambda_{j1}, \dots, \lambda_{je} \in G(L)$  such that  $L_j^{\lambda_{ji}} \subseteq \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\tau_i}, i = 1, \dots, e$ . Let  $\lambda_{ji} = \tau_i$  for  $i = e + 1, \dots, m$  and  $\boldsymbol{\lambda}_j = (\lambda_{j1}, \dots, \lambda_{jm})$ .

Condition (1c) implies by [J1, Lemma 6.3] that for almost all  $\boldsymbol{\lambda} \in G(L)^m$  there exists  $j \geq 1$  such that  $\text{res}_{L_j} \boldsymbol{\lambda}^{-1} = \text{res}_{L_j} \boldsymbol{\lambda}_j$ . But then  $L_j^{\lambda_i^{-1}} = L_j^{\lambda_{ji}} \subseteq \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\tau_i}$ , hence  $L_j \subseteq \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\tau_i \lambda_i}, i = 1, \dots, e$ . Also,  $\text{res}_{L_j} \lambda_i^{-1} = \text{res}_{L_j} \tau_i$ , hence  $L_j \subseteq \tilde{\mathbb{Q}}(\tau_i \lambda_i), i = e + 1, \dots, m$ . Conclude that  $L_j \subseteq \mathbb{Q}_{\boldsymbol{\tau}\boldsymbol{\lambda}}$ . Thus  $(a_j, b_j)$  is a  $\mathbb{Q}_{\boldsymbol{\tau}\boldsymbol{\lambda}}$ -rational zero of  $f$ . ■

LEMMA 12.5: For almost all  $\boldsymbol{\sigma} \in G(\mathbb{Q})^m$  the field  $\mathbb{Q}_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}$  is PpC and has at most  $e$  distinct  $p$ -adic valuations.

*Proof:* Fix a countable dense subset  $T$  of  $G(\mathbb{Q})^m$ . Let  $\boldsymbol{\sigma} \in G(\mathbb{Q})^m$  and consider an absolutely irreducible polynomial  $f \in \mathbb{Q}_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}[X, Y]$  which has a  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_i}$ -rational zero  $(a_i, b_i)$  such that  $\frac{\partial f}{\partial Y}(a_i, b_i) \neq 0$  for  $i = 1, \dots, e$ . Let  $L \subseteq \mathbb{Q}_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}$  be a finite extension of  $\mathbb{Q}$  that contains the coefficients of  $f$ . Consider  $\boldsymbol{\tau} \in T \cap \boldsymbol{\sigma}G(L)^m$ . Since  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\tau_i}$  is isomorphic to  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_i}$  over  $L$ ,  $f$  has a  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\tau_i}$ -rational zero  $(a'_i, b'_i)$  such that  $\frac{\partial f}{\partial Y}(a'_i, b'_i) \neq 0, i = 1, \dots, e$ . Hence, by Lemma 12.4,  $f$  has a  $\mathbb{Q}_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}$ -rational point, unless  $\boldsymbol{\sigma}$  belongs to a zero subset of  $\boldsymbol{\tau}G(L)^m$ . Use that a countable union of zero sets is again a zero set to exclude such a case. Conclude from Lemma 12.3 that  $\mathbb{Q}_{\boldsymbol{\sigma}}$  is PpC and has at most  $e$  distinct  $p$ -adic valuations. ■

REMARK 12.6: *Regular action.* A regular action of a finite group on a finite set  $X$  is unique up to a permutation of  $X$ . More precisely, if two groups  $G$  and  $G'$  act regularly

on  $X$  (Definition 1.1) and there exists an isomorphism  $\varphi: G \rightarrow G'$ , then there exists a permutation  $s$  of  $X$  such that

$$(2) \quad x^{\varphi(g)s} = x^{sg}, \quad \text{for } g \in G \text{ and } x \in X.$$

Indeed, let  $X_0$  be a system of representatives for the  $G$ -orbits of  $X$ . Then each  $x \in X$  can be uniquely written as  $x = x_0^g$  with  $x_0 \in X_0$  and  $g \in G$ . It follows that  $|X_0| = |X|/|G|$ . Similarly, a system  $X'_0$  of representatives for the  $G'$ -orbits of  $X$  has  $|X|/|G'|$  elements. Thus there exists a bijective map  $s: X'_0 \rightarrow X_0$ . Extend  $s$  to a permutation of  $X$  by the rule  $x_0^{\varphi(g)s} = x_0^{sg}$ , for  $x_0 \in X'_0$  and  $g \in G$ . Obviously, it satisfies (2).  $\blacksquare$

NOTATION 12.7: Let  $\Gamma_{e,m} = \Gamma_1 * \cdots * \Gamma_e * \widehat{F}_{m-e}$  be the free product in the category of profinite groups of  $e$  copies  $\Gamma_1, \dots, \Gamma_e$  of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ , and  $\widehat{F}_{m-e}$ , the free profinite group on  $m - e$  generators (c.f., (1) of Section 3).

LEMMA 12.8: *For almost all  $\sigma \in G(\mathbb{Q})^m$*

$$(3) \quad G(\mathbb{Q}_\sigma) \cong \Gamma_{e,m}.$$

*Proof:* We follow Geyer's proof [G] for the case  $e = m$ . The case  $e = 0$  is treated in [J2, Thm. 5.1]. So assume  $e \geq 1$ . Since both sides of (3) are finitely generated, it suffices to prove that they have the same finite quotients. But  $G(\mathbb{Q}_\sigma)$ , being generated by  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p^{\sigma_i}) \cong G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, e$ , and  $\langle \sigma_{e+1}, \dots, \sigma_m \rangle$  is a quotient of  $\Gamma_{e,m}$ . Thus it suffices to consider finite groups of the form  $G = \langle G_1, \dots, G_{e+1} \rangle$  where  $G_i \cong \mathcal{G}(E/\mathbb{Q}_p)$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, e$ , the field  $E$  is a finite Galois extension of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ , and  $G_{e+1}$  is generated by  $m - e$  elements, and to prove that  $G$  is a quotient of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_\sigma)$  for almost all  $\sigma \in G(\mathbb{Q})^m$ .

Let  $x_1$  be a primitive element for the extension  $E/\mathbb{Q}_p$  and let  $x_1, \dots, x_s$  be the conjugates of  $x_1$  over  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ . Note that  $n = |G|$  is a multiple of  $s = |G_i|$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, e$ . Take integers  $k_1, \dots, k_{n/s}$  such that  $x_i + k_j \neq x_r + k_t$  if  $(i, j) \neq (r, t)$ . Then  $f(X) = \prod_{i=1}^s \prod_{j=1}^{n/s} (X - x_i - k_j)$  is a monic polynomial with coefficients in  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  with  $n = \deg(f)$  distinct roots. Each of the roots is a primitive element for  $E/\mathbb{Q}_p$ . Hence  $\mathcal{G}(E/\mathbb{Q}_p)$  acts regularly on them.

Use Hilbert irreducibility theorem and [G, Lemma 3.4] to inductively construct a sequence  $f_1, f_2, f_3, \dots$  of monic polynomials in  $\mathbb{Q}[X]$  of degree  $n$  and a sequence  $L_1, L_2, L_3, \dots$  of Galois extensions of  $\mathbb{Q}$  such that for each  $j \geq 1$

( 4a)  $L_j$  is the splitting field of  $f_j$  over  $\mathbb{Q}$ , and  $\mathcal{G}(L_j/\mathbb{Q}) \cong S_n$ ;

( 4b)  $f_j$  is  $p$ -adically close to  $f$ ; and

( 4c)  $L_1, L_2, L_3, \dots$  are linearly disjoint over  $\mathbb{Q}$ .

(cf. the proof of [J1, Lemma 2.2]).

Condition (4b) implies by Krasner's lemma [Ri, pp. 190-197] that the splitting field of  $f_j$  over  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  coincides with that of  $f$ , namely with  $E$ . Moreover each of the roots of  $f_j$  is  $p$ -adically close to a root of  $f$  and therefore generates  $E$  over  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ . Thus  $\mathcal{G}(L_j/L_j \cap \mathbb{Q}_p) \cong \mathcal{G}(E/\mathbb{Q}_p)$  regularly acts on the set of roots  $R_j$  of  $f_j$ , and  $|R_j| = n$ . On the other hand  $G$  acts regularly on itself by multiplication from the right. So identify  $G$  as a subgroup of  $\mathcal{G}(L_j/\mathbb{Q})$ , which is by (4a) the full permutation group of  $R_j$ . Denote the image of  $G_i$  under this identification by  $G_{ji}, i = 1, \dots, e+1$ . Choose an isomorphism  $\varphi_{ji}: G_{ji} \rightarrow \mathcal{G}(L_j/L_j \cap \mathbb{Q}_p)$ . By Remark 12.6 there exists  $\sigma_{ji} \in \mathcal{G}(L_j/\mathbb{Q})$  such that  $x^{\varphi_{ji}(g)\sigma_{ji}} = x^{\sigma_{ji}g}$  for each  $x \in R_j$  and  $g \in G_{ji}$ . Thus  $\sigma_{ji}^{-1}\varphi_{ji}(g)\sigma_{ji} = g$  for each  $g \in G_{ji}$ . It follows that  $G_{ji} = \mathcal{G}(L_j/L_j \cap \mathbb{Q}_p)^{\sigma_{ji}}$ . Also, let  $\sigma_{j,e+1}, \dots, \sigma_{jm}$  be generators of  $G_{j,e+1}$ .

By [J2, Lemma 4.1], for almost all  $\sigma \in G(\mathbb{Q})^m$  there exists  $j \geq 1$  such that the restriction of  $\sigma$  to  $L_j$  is  $(\sigma_{j1}, \dots, \sigma_{jm})$ . Therefore

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{G}(L_j\mathbb{Q}_\sigma/\mathbb{Q}_\sigma) &\cong \mathcal{G}(L_j/L_j \cap \mathbb{Q}_\sigma) \\ &= \langle \mathcal{G}(L_j/L_j \cap \mathbb{Q}_p)^{\sigma_{j1}}, \dots, \mathcal{G}(L_j/L_j \cap \mathbb{Q}_p)^{\sigma_{je}}, \sigma_{j,e+1}, \dots, \sigma_{jm} \rangle \\ &= \langle G_{j1}, \dots, G_{je}, G_{j,e+1} \rangle = G. \end{aligned}$$

Thus  $G$  is a quotient of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_\sigma)$ . ■

PROPOSITION 12.9: *The following statements hold for almost all  $\sigma \in G(\mathbb{Q})^m$ :*

(a)  $\mathbb{Q}_\sigma$  is a PpC field;

(b)  $G(\mathbb{Q}_\sigma) = G(\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_1}) * \dots * G(\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_e}) * \langle \sigma_{e+1}, \dots, \sigma_m \rangle \cong \Gamma_{e,m}$ ;

(c)  $\mathbb{Q}_\sigma$  has exactly  $e$   $p$ -adic valuations; they are induced by the  $p$ -adic Henselizations

$\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_1}, \dots, \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_e}$  of  $\mathbb{Q}_\sigma$ ; and

(d) if  $M$  and  $M'$  are two distinct  $p$ -adic Henselizations of  $\mathbb{Q}_\sigma$ , then  $MM' = \tilde{\mathbb{Q}}$ .

*Proof of (a):* See Lemma 12.5.

*Proof of (b):* The isomorphisms  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p) \rightarrow G(\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_i})$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, e$ , and  $\widehat{F}_{m-e} \rightarrow \langle \sigma_{e+1}, \dots, \sigma_m \rangle$  combine to an epimorphism  $\varphi: \Gamma_{e,m} \rightarrow G(\mathbb{Q}_\sigma)$ . Since, by Lemma 12.8, both groups are finitely generated and isomorphic,  $\bar{\varphi}$  is an isomorphism [R, p. 69].

*Proof of (c):* Map  $G(\mathbb{Q}_\sigma)$  homomorphically onto the direct product  $G(\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_1}) \times \dots \times G(\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_e})$  to conclude that  $G(\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_1}), \dots, G(\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_e})$  are pairwise nonconjugate in  $G(\mathbb{Q}_\sigma)$ . Thus  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_1}, \dots, \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_e}$  induce  $e$  distinct  $p$ -adic valuations  $v_1, \dots, v_e$  on  $\mathbb{Q}_\sigma$ . Since  $\mathbb{Q}_\sigma$  has at most  $e$   $p$ -adic valuations (Lemma 12.5),  $v_1, \dots, v_e$  are all of them.

*Proof of (d):* Extend the  $p$ -adic valuations  $v$  of  $M$  and  $v'$  of  $M'$  to  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}$ . Since  $M$  and  $M'$  are the respective decomposition fields of  $v$  and  $v'$ , these valuations are distinct on  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}$  and therefore on  $MM'$ . Thus  $MM'$  is Henselian with respect to two distinct 1-rank valuations. Use Lemma 11.4 to conclude that  $MM' = \tilde{\mathbb{Q}}$ . ■

We conclude this section by a proposition that allows us to apply the results of Sections 3, 4 and 5 to  $\Gamma = G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ .

PROPOSITION 12.10: *The group  $\Gamma = G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  satisfies Assumption 3.1.*

*Proof:* Proposition 6.5 says that  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  satisfies conditions (a) and (b) of Assumption 3.1. As to the other conditions let  $\sigma$  be an element of  $G(\mathbb{Q})^m$  that satisfies the conclusions of Proposition 12.9. In particular  $G(\mathbb{Q}_\sigma) \cong \Gamma_{e,m}$ . Let  $E$  be the finite Galois extension of  $\mathbb{Q}_p$  mentioned in Proposition 11.5. Consider a closed subgroup  $H$  of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_\sigma)$ . Suppose that  $H$  is a quotient of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  and has  $\mathcal{G}(E/\mathbb{Q}_p)$  as its quotient (i.e.,  $H$  is a large quotient of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ ). Then  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}(H) \cong \mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}$ . Hence  $H \cong G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  (this gives Assumption 3.1(d)). Also,  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}(H)$  induces  $p$ -adic valuation on  $\mathbb{Q}_\sigma$ . By Proposition 12.9, it coincides with the valuation induced by some  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_i}$ . Therefore  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}(H)$  is  $\mathbb{Q}_\sigma$ -isomorphic to  $\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_i}$ , and  $H$  is conjugate to  $G(\mathbb{Q}_{p,\text{alg}}^{\sigma_i})$ . Thus Assumption 3.1(c1) holds. Assumption 3.1(c2) follows from Proposition 8.9(c). Finally Proposition 12.9(d) implies Assumption 3.1(c3). ■



### Part C. Projective $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structures as absolute $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -Galois structures.

From now on we replace the term “ $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -projective group” by “ $p$ -adically projective group”. The absolute  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure  $\mathbf{G}(K)$  of a PpC field  $K$  is projective and the absolute Galois group of  $K$  is  $p$ -adically projective (Theorem 15.1). Most of Part C proves the converse. For each projective  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure  $\mathbf{G}$  there exists a PpC field  $K$  such that  $\mathbf{G} \cong \mathbf{G}(K)$  (Theorem 15.3) and for each  $p$ -adically projective group  $G$  there exists a PpC field  $K$  such that  $G \cong G(K)$  (Theorem 15.4). Section 13 prepares the proof by showing the existence of continuous sections to the maps  $\text{Res}_{F/L}: X(F/E) \rightarrow X(L/K)$  in various cases. In particular Proposition 13.11 asserts that for each Boolean space  $X$  there exists a PpC field  $K$  such that  $X \cong X(K)$ . In Section 14 we prove that for each  $p$ -adic structure  $\mathbf{G}$  (not necessarily projective) there exists a Galois extension  $F/E$ , with  $E$  PpC, such that  $\mathbf{G} \cong \mathbf{G}(F/E)$ .

### 13. Restriction maps of spaces of sites.

The restriction map  $\text{Res}_{L'/L}: X(L'/K') \rightarrow X(L/K)$  for two Galois extensions  $L'/K'$  and  $L/K$  with  $K \subseteq K'$  and  $L \subseteq L'$  is continuous (Section 10). Since spaces of sites are compact and Hausdorff,  $\text{Res}_{L'/L}$  is a closed map. In this section we prove openness results and investigate the existence of continuous sections for these maps.

LEMMA 13.1: *Let  $E/K$  be a finite extension. Then  $\text{Res}_{E/K}: X(E) \rightarrow X(K)$  is an open map. Moreover,  $X(E)$  has a partition  $\{V_i\}_{i=1}^n$  such that for each  $i$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq n$ ,  $\text{Res}_{E/K}: V_i \rightarrow \text{Res}_{E/K}(V_i)$  is a homeomorphism.*

*Proof:* By compactness, it suffices to find for each  $\theta \in X(E)$  an open-closed neighborhood  $V$  on which  $\text{Res}_{E/K}$  is injective and such that  $\text{Res}_{E/K}(V)$  is open-closed.

Indeed let  $L$  be a finite Galois extension of  $K$  that contains  $E$ . Consider the following commutative diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} X(L/E) & \xrightarrow{i} & X(L/K) \\ \text{Res}_{L/E} \downarrow & & \downarrow \text{Res}_{L/K} \\ X(E) & \xrightarrow{\text{Res}_{E/K}} & X(K) \end{array}$$

Here  $i$  is the inclusion map. By (2) of Section 10,  $X(L/E)$  consists of all  $\theta \in X(L/K)$  such that  $D(\theta) \leq \mathcal{G}(L/E)$ . Since  $D: X(L/K) \rightarrow \text{Subg}(\mathcal{G}(L/K))$  is continuous and

$\mathcal{G}(L/K)$  is finite,  $X(L/E)$  is open in  $X(L/K)$ . Hence  $i$  is open. The vertical maps are quotient maps by  $\mathcal{G}(L/E)$  and  $\mathcal{G}(L/K)$ , respectively, and therefore open [HJ, Claim 1.6]. Conclude for each open subset  $V$  of  $X(E)$  that  $\text{Res}_{E/K}(V) = \text{Res}_{L/K}(\text{Res}_{L/E}^{-1}(V))$  is open in  $X(K)$ .

Now extend  $\theta$  to  $\theta' \in X(L/E)$ . Since  $(\theta')^\sigma \neq \theta'$  for each  $\sigma, 1 \neq \sigma \in \mathcal{G}(L/K)$  (Proposition 9.3(b)),  $\theta'$  has an open-closed neighborhood  $V' \subseteq X(L/E)$  such that  $\theta' \notin (V')^\sigma$  for each  $\sigma, 1 \neq \sigma \in \mathcal{G}(L/K)$ . Replace  $V'$  by  $V' - \bigcap_{\sigma \neq 1} (V')^\sigma$  to assume that  $V' \cap (V')^\sigma = \emptyset$  for each  $\sigma \neq 1$ . It follows that  $\text{Res}_{L/K}$  is injective on  $V'$  (Proposition 9.3(b)). Hence  $\text{Res}_{E/K}$  is injective on the open-closed neighborhood  $V = \text{Res}_{L/E}(V')$  of  $\theta$ . ■

LEMMA 13.2: Let  $L/K$  be a Galois extension,  $T$  an ordered set of algebraically independent elements over  $L$  and  $\varepsilon$  a function from  $T$  into  $\{\pm 1\}$ . Consider  $E = K(T)$ ,  $F = L(T)$  and for each  $t \in T$  let  $L_t = L(t_0 \in T | t_0 < t)$ . Then each  $\theta \in X(L/K)$  uniquely extends to  $\theta_T = (\pi_T, \varphi_T) \in X(F/E)$  such that

$$(1) \quad \pi_T(at) = 0 \text{ for all } a \in L_t \text{ and } \varphi_T(t) = \varepsilon(t).$$

Moreover, for each  $t \in T$  and each  $f \in L_t[X]$  with  $f(0) \neq 0$

$$(2) \quad \varphi_T(f(t)) = \varphi_T(f(0)).$$

Finally, the map  $\theta \mapsto \theta_T$  is a continuous section of  $\text{Res}_{F/L}: X(F/E) \rightarrow X(L/K)$ .

Proof: Replace  $T$  if necessary by  $\{\varepsilon(t)t | t \in T\}$  to assume that  $\varepsilon(t) = 1$  for all  $t \in T$ . The uniqueness part of the Lemma reduces the infinite case to the finite case. The latter follows by induction on  $|T|$  from the case  $|T| = 1$ . So assume that  $T = \{t\}$ .

Each element  $a \in F^\times$  has a unique presentation,

$$a = a_0 t^m \frac{1 + b_1 t + \cdots + b_k t^k}{1 + c_1 t + \cdots + c_l t^l},$$

where  $a_0 \in L^\times$ ,  $m \in \mathbb{Z}$  and  $1 + b_1 t + \cdots + b_k t^k$  and  $1 + c_1 t + \cdots + c_l t^l$  are relatively prime polynomials in  $L[t]$ .

Let  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi) \in X(L/K)$  and let  $\theta' = (\pi', \varphi') \in X(F/E)$  be an extension of  $\theta$  which satisfies (1). Then

$$(3) \quad \pi'(1 + b_1 t + \cdots + b_k t^k) = \pi'(1 + c_1 t + \cdots + c_l t^l) = 1.$$

Hence

$$(4) \quad \pi'(a) = \pi'(a_0 t^m) = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{if } m > 0 \\ \pi(a_0) & \text{if } m = 0 \\ \infty & \text{if } m < 0. \end{cases}$$

By (3),  $\varphi'(1 + b_1 t + \cdots + b_k t^k) = \varphi'(1 + c_1 t + \cdots + c_l t^l) = 1$ . Hence

$$(5) \quad \varphi'(a) = \varphi(a_0).$$

This proves the uniqueness of  $\theta'$  and (2).

To prove the existence, use (4) and (5) as definitions for  $\pi'$  and  $\varphi'$  and check that indeed  $\theta' = (\pi', \varphi') \in X(F/E)$ .

The continuity of the map  $\theta \mapsto \theta'$  follows from (4) and (5) by (1) of Section 10.

■

**DEFINITION 13.3:** Let  $\varepsilon(t) = 1$  for all  $t \in T$ . We call  $\theta_T \in X(F/E)$  of Lemma 13.2 the **infinitesimal** extension of  $\theta$  to  $X(F/E)$  with respect to  $T$ .

**PROPOSITION 13.4:** Let  $E/K$  be a finitely generated extension and let  $H_E$  be an open-closed subset of  $X(E)$ . Then  $H_K = \text{Res}_{E/K}(H_E)$  is open-closed in  $X(K)$  and the restriction map  $\text{Res}_{E/K}: H_E \rightarrow H_K$  has a continuous section.

*Proof:* First note that if  $K \subseteq K' \subseteq E$ ,  $H_{K'} = \text{Res}_{E/K'}(H_E)$  and the proposition holds for the maps  $\text{Res}_{E/K'}: H_E \rightarrow H_{K'}$  and  $\text{Res}_{K'/K}: H_{K'} \rightarrow H_K$ , then it also holds for their composition  $\text{Res}_{E/K}: H_E \rightarrow H_K$ . This reduces the proposition to the case where  $E/K$  is a simple extension. Also, by compactness, it suffices to find for each  $\theta \in H_K$  an open-closed neighborhood  $V$  in  $H_K$  and a continuous map  $s: V \rightarrow H_E$  such that for each  $\theta \in V$ ,  $s(\theta)$  extends  $\theta$ . If  $E/K$  is finite this follows from Lemma 13.1. So, assume that  $E = K(t)$  and  $t$  is transcendental over  $K$ .

Let  $\theta_0 = (\pi_0, \varphi_0) \in H_K$  and let  $\theta'_0 = (\pi'_0, \varphi'_0) \in H_E$  be an extension of  $\theta_0$  to  $E$ . By Remark 10.5,  $\theta'_0$  has an open-closed neighborhood  $H'_E \subseteq H_E$  of the form

$$H'_E = \{(\pi', \varphi') \in X(E) \mid \varphi'(f_i(t)) \in \Phi^m, \quad i = 1, \dots, r\}$$

where  $f_1(t), \dots, f_r(t) \in E^\times$ , and  $m \in \mathbb{N}$ . Let  $f_i(t) = g_i(t)/g_0(t)$ , with  $g_0(t), \dots, g_r(t) \in K[t]$ . Replace  $f_i(t)$  if necessary by  $f_i(t)g_0(t)^{m-1}$  to assume that  $f_i(t) \in K[T]$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, r$ . The rest of the proof splits into two parts.

PART A: A special case. Suppose first that there exists  $a \in K$  such that

$$f_i(a) \neq 0 \text{ and } \varphi'_0(f_i(a)) \in \Phi^m, \quad i = 1, \dots, r.$$

Replace  $t$  if necessary by  $t - a$  to assume that  $a = 0$ . By Lemma 13.2  $\text{Res}_{E/K}: X(E) \rightarrow X(K)$  has a continuous section  $s$  such that each  $(\pi', \varphi') \in s(X(K))$  satisfies  $\varphi'(f_i(t)) = \varphi(f_i(0))$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, r$ . In particular  $s$  maps the open-closed neighborhood of  $\theta_0$ ,

$$V = \{(\pi, \varphi) \in X(K) \mid \varphi(f_i(0)) \in \Phi^m, \quad i = 1, \dots, r\}$$

into  $H_E$ .

PART B: Reduction of the general case to the case of Part A. Let  $(\bar{E}, \bar{\theta}_0)$ , with  $\bar{\theta}_0 = (\bar{\pi}_0, \bar{\varphi}_0)$  be a  $\Theta$ -closure of  $(E, \theta'_0)$  (Proposition 8.7). Then  $\bar{E}$  is  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ -closed (Lemma 8.6), so  $\bar{E}$  is  $p$ -adically closed (Remark 7.4). By Lemma 7.6 and Lemma 6.8(b),  $\bar{\varphi}_0$  induces an isomorphism of  $\bar{E}^\times / (\bar{E}^\times)^m$  onto  $\Phi / \Phi^m$ . Since  $\bar{\varphi}_0(f_i(t)) \in \Phi^m$  there exists  $z_i \in \bar{E}^\times$  such that  $f_i(t) = z_i^m, i = 1, \dots, r$ .

The field  $\bar{K} = \tilde{K} \cap \bar{E}$  is  $p$ -adically closed (Proposition 6.4(a)). Hence,  $\bar{E}$  is an elementary extension of  $\bar{K}$  (Proposition 6.4(b)). In particular there exist  $a \in \bar{K}$  and  $c_1, \dots, c_r \in \bar{K}^\times$  such that  $f_i(a) = c_i^m$  for  $i = 1, \dots, r$ . Let  $L = K(a, c_1, \dots, c_r)$ ,  $F = L(t)$ ,  $\theta'_1 = (\pi'_1, \varphi'_1) = \text{Res}_F \bar{\theta}_0$ ,  $\theta_1 = \text{Res}_L \theta'_1$ ,

$$H'_F = \text{Res}_{F/E}^{-1}(H'_E) = \{(\pi', \varphi') \in X(F) \mid \varphi'(f_i(t)) \in \Phi^m, \quad i = 1, \dots, r\}$$

and  $H'_L = \text{Res}_{F/L}(H'_F)$ . Then  $\text{Res}_{L/K}(H'_L) \subseteq H_K$ . By Part A,  $\theta_1$  has an open-closed neighborhood  $V_1$  and there exists a continuous map  $s_1: V_1 \rightarrow H'_F$  such that  $s_1(\theta)$  extends  $\theta$  for each  $\theta \in V_1$ . Since  $L/K$  is finite, the beginning of the proof implies that  $V = \text{Res}_{L/K}(V_1)$  is an open-closed neighborhood of  $\theta_0$  and  $\text{Res}_{L/K}: V_1 \rightarrow V$  has a continuous section  $s_0$ . Clearly  $s = \text{Res}_{F/E} \circ s_1 \circ s_0: V \rightarrow H_E$  is a continuous map and  $s(\theta)$  extends  $\theta$  for each  $\theta \in V$ . ■

LEMMA 13.5: Let  $K$  be a field and let  $H$  be an open-closed subset of  $X(K)$ . Then there exists a finitely generated regular extension  $E$  of  $K$  such that  $\text{Res}_{E/K}X(E) = H$ .

*Proof:* We divide the proof into three parts.

PART A: Construction of  $E$ . Write  $H$  in the form

$$H = \bigcap_{i=1}^r \bigcup_{j=1}^n \{(\pi, \varphi) \in X(K) \mid \varphi(a_{ij}) \in \Phi^m\},$$

with  $a_{ij} \in K^\times$  and  $m \in \mathbb{N}$  (Remark 10.5). Let  $S \subseteq \mathbb{Z}$  be a finite set of representatives for  $\mathbb{Q}_p^\times / (\mathbb{Q}_p^\times)^m$  (Lemma 6.8(b1)). By Lemma 7.6(b),  $S$  represents  $M^\times / (M^\times)^m$  for every  $p$ -adically closed field  $M$ . Choose  $k \in \mathbb{N}$  such that

$$(6) \quad k > 2v_p(m) + 2v_p(s) \quad \text{for all } s \in S.$$

Consider the algebraic subset  $V$  of the affine space  $\mathbb{A}^{(n+2)r}$  defined by the system of equations

$$(7) \quad (Y_{i1}^m - a_{i1}) \cdots (Y_{in}^m - a_{in}) = a_{i1} \cdots a_{in} p^{kn} (\gamma(X_{i1}) + \gamma(X_{i2})), \quad i = 1, \dots, r,$$

where  $\gamma(X)$  is the Kochen operator ((1) of Section 6). By a theorem of Schinzel [Sc], each of the equations in (7) is absolutely irreducible. Since the equations are algebraically independent,  $V$  is an absolutely irreducible variety defined over  $K$ . Its function field  $E$  is a finitely generated regular extension of  $K$ .

PART B:  $\text{Res}_{E/K}X(E) \subseteq H$ . Let  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi) \in X(E)$ . As in Part B of the proof of Proposition 13.4, let  $(\bar{E}, \bar{\theta})$ , with  $\bar{\theta} = (\bar{\pi}, \bar{\varphi})$ , be a  $\Theta$ -closure of  $(E, \theta)$ . By construction there exist  $y_{i1}, \dots, y_{in} \in E^\times$  and  $x_{i1}, x_{i2} \in E$  such that

$$(8) \quad (y_{i1}^m - a_{i1}) \cdots (y_{in}^m - a_{in}) = a_{i1} \cdots a_{in} p^{kn} (\gamma(x_{i1}) + \gamma(x_{i2})), \quad i = 1, \dots, r.$$

For each  $i$  and  $j$  take  $b_{ij} \in \bar{E}^\times$  and  $s_{ij} \in S$  such that  $a_{ij} = b_{ij}^m s_{ij}$ . Let  $z_{ij} = y_{ij}/b_{ij}$ . Divide (8) by  $b_{i1}^m \cdots b_{in}^m$  to obtain

$$(9) \quad (z_{i1}^m - s_{i1}) \cdots (z_{in}^m - s_{in}) = s_{i1} \cdots s_{in} p^{kn} (\gamma(x_{i1}) + \gamma(x_{i2})), \quad i = 1, \dots, r.$$

Apply the  $p$ -adic valuation  $\bar{v}$  of  $\bar{E}$  associated with  $\bar{\pi}$  on (9) and use Lemma 6.1:

$$(10) \quad \sum_{j=1}^n \bar{v}(z_{ij}^m - s_{ij}) \geq \sum_{j=1}^n (v_p(s_{ij}) + k), \quad i = 1, \dots, r.$$

For each  $i$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq r$ , (10) gives  $j = j(i)$  such that

$$(11) \quad \bar{v}(z_{ij}^m - s_{ij}) \geq \bar{v}(s_{ij}) + k > \bar{v}(s_{ij}).$$

Therefore  $\bar{v}(z_{ij}^m) = \bar{v}(s_{ij})$ . Hence, by (6) and (11),

$$\bar{v}(mz_{ij}^{m-1}) = \bar{v}(m) + \frac{m-1}{m} \bar{v}(z_{ij}^m) \leq \bar{v}(m) + \bar{v}(s_{ij}) < \frac{1}{2}k \leq \frac{1}{2} \bar{v}(z_{ij}^m - s_{ij}).$$

Since  $\bar{E}$  is Henselian with respect to  $\bar{v}$  (Lemmas 8.6 and 7.5) we may apply the Hensel-Rychlik lemma to  $Z^m - s_{ij}$  and obtain  $c_{ij} \in \bar{E}^\times$  such that  $c_{ij}^m = s_{ij}$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, r$ . It follows that  $\varphi(a_{ij}) = \bar{\varphi}(b_{ij}c_{ij})^m \in \Phi^m$ . This means that  $\text{Res}_{E/K}\theta \in H$ .

PART C:  $H \subseteq \text{Res}_{E/K}X(E)$ . Let  $\theta = (\pi, \varphi) \in H$ . Extend  $(K, \theta)$  to a  $\Theta$ -closure  $(\bar{K}, \bar{\theta})$ , with  $\bar{\theta} = (\bar{\pi}, \bar{\varphi})$  (Proposition 8.7). By Lemma 8.6,  $\bar{K}$  is  $p$ -adically closed. Hence  $\bar{\varphi}$  induces an isomorphism of  $\bar{K}^\times / (\bar{K}^\times)^m$  onto  $\Phi / \Phi^m$  (Lemma 7.6 and Lemma 6.8(c)). In particular, for each  $i$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq r$ , there exist  $j(i)$ ,  $1 \leq j(i) \leq n$ , and  $y_{i,j(i)} \in \bar{K}^\times$  such that  $y_{i,j(i)}^m = a_{i,j(i)}$ . Let  $y_{ij} = 0$  for each  $j \neq j(i)$  and  $x_{i1} = x_{i2} = 0$ . Then  $\{(y_{i1}, \dots, y_{in}, x_{i1}, x_{i2}) \mid i = 1, \dots, r\}$  is a  $\bar{K}$ -rational simple point of  $V$ . Extend  $\bar{\pi}$  to a  $\mathbb{Q}_p$ -place  $\pi_1$  of  $\bar{K}E$  (Proposition 6.4(c)). The  $p$ -adic closure  $(\bar{E}, \bar{\pi})$  of  $(\bar{K}E, \pi_1)$  has a unique  $\Theta$ -site  $\theta'$  whose restriction to  $\bar{K}$  is the unique  $\Theta$ -site  $\bar{\theta}$  of  $\bar{K}$  (Proposition 8.9). The  $p$ -adic closure  $(\bar{E}, \bar{\pi})$  of  $(\bar{K}E, \bar{\pi}_1)$  has a unique  $\Theta$ -site  $\theta'$  whose restriction to  $\bar{K}$  is the unique  $\Theta$ -site  $\bar{\theta}$  of  $\bar{K}$  (Proposition 8.9). Conclude that  $\theta = \text{Res}_{E/K}(\text{Res}_{\bar{E}/E}\theta') \in \text{Res}_{E/K}X(E)$ . ■

LEMMA 13.6: Let  $K$  be a field and let  $C$  be a closed subset of  $X(K)$ . Then there exists a regular extension  $E$  of  $K$  such that  $\text{Res}_{E/K}X(E) = C$ , and  $\text{Res}_{E/K}: X(E) \rightarrow C$  has a continuous section.

Proof: The set  $C$  is the intersection of open-closed sets,  $C = \bigcap_{\lambda < m} H_\lambda$ , where  $\lambda$  ranges over all ordinals smaller than some cardinal number  $m$ . For each  $\mu \leq m$  let  $C_\mu =$

$\bigcap_{\lambda < \mu} H_\lambda$ . Thus  $C_0 = X(K)$  and  $C_m = C$ . If  $\lambda < \lambda' \leq m$ , then  $C_{\lambda'} \subseteq C_\lambda$ . Denote the inclusion map  $C_{\lambda'} \rightarrow C_\lambda$  by  $i_{\lambda', \lambda}$ . Finally let  $E_0 = K$  and let  $s_0$  be the identity map of  $X(K)$ .

Let  $\mu \leq m$ . Suppose, by transfinite induction, that for each  $\lambda < \mu$  we have constructed

(12a) a regular extension  $E_\lambda$  of  $K$  such that  $\text{Res}_{E_\lambda/K} X(E_\lambda) = C_\lambda$ ; and

(12b) a continuous section  $s_\lambda: C_\lambda \rightarrow X(E_\lambda)$  of  $\text{Res}_{E_\lambda/K}$ ;

such that for every  $\lambda \leq \lambda' < \mu$

$$(13) \quad E_\lambda \subseteq E_{\lambda'} \text{ and } \text{Res}_{E_{\lambda'}/E_\lambda} \circ s_{\lambda'} = s_\lambda \circ i_{\lambda', \lambda}.$$

If  $\mu$  is a limit ordinal, let  $E_\mu = \bigcup_{\lambda < \mu} E_\lambda$ . Then  $E_\mu/K$  is regular and  $X(E_\mu) = \varprojlim_{\lambda < \mu} X(E_\lambda)$ . Hence  $\text{Res}_{E_\mu/K} X(E_\mu) = \bigcap_{\lambda < \mu} C_\lambda = C_\mu$ . Also, the maps  $s_\lambda \circ i_{\mu, \lambda}$ , with  $\lambda < \mu$ , define a section  $s_\mu: C_\mu \rightarrow X(E_\mu)$  of  $\text{Res}_{E_\mu/K}$  such that  $\text{Res}_{E_\mu/E_\lambda} \circ s_\mu = s_\lambda \circ i_{\mu, \lambda}$ , for every  $\lambda < \mu$ .

If  $\mu = \lambda + 1$ , then  $C_\mu = C_\lambda \cap H_\lambda$ . Hence  $C'_\mu = \text{Res}_{E_\lambda/K}^{-1}(C_\mu) = \text{Res}_{E_\lambda/K}^{-1}(H_\lambda)$  is an open-closed subset of  $X(E_\lambda)$  and  $s_\lambda(C_\mu) \subseteq C'_\mu$ . By Lemma 13.5,  $E_\lambda$  has a finitely generated regular extension  $E_\mu$  such that  $\text{Res}_{E_\mu/E_\lambda} X(E_\mu) = C'_\mu$ . By Proposition 13.4,  $\text{Res}_{E_\mu/E_\lambda}: X(E_\mu) \rightarrow C'_\mu$  has a continuous section  $s'_\mu: C'_\mu \rightarrow X(E_\mu)$ . Obviously  $\text{Res}_{E_\mu/K} X(E_\mu) = C_\mu$  and the map  $s_\mu = s'_\mu \circ s_\lambda \circ i_{\mu, \lambda}$  is a continuous section of  $\text{Res}_{E_\mu/K}: X(E_\mu) \rightarrow C_\mu$  such that  $\text{Res}_{E_\mu/E_\lambda} \circ s_\mu = s_\lambda \circ i_{\mu, \lambda}$ . Thus  $E_\mu$  and  $s_\mu$  satisfy the induction hypothesis.

Let  $E = E_m$  and  $s = s_m$ . Then  $\text{Res}_{E/K} X(K) = C_m = C$  and  $s: C \rightarrow X(E)$  is a continuous section of  $\text{Res}_{E/K}$ . ■

LEMMA 13.7: Let  $K$  be a field and let  $C$  be a closed subset of  $X(K)$ . Then  $K$  has a regular extension  $E$  such that  $\text{Res}_{E/K}$  maps  $X(E)$  homeomorphically onto  $C$ .

*Proof:* Let  $E_0 = K$  and  $C_0 = C$ . Suppose by induction that for  $n \in \mathbb{N}$  there exists a tower  $E_0 \subseteq E_1 \subseteq \dots \subseteq E_n$  of regular extensions and for each  $i$ ,  $1 \leq i \leq n$ ,  $\text{Res}_{E_i/E_{i-1}}(X(E_i)) = C_{i-1}$  and  $X(E_i)$  has a closed subset  $C_i$  which  $\text{Res}_{E_i/E_{i-1}}$  maps homeomorphically onto  $C_{i-1}$ . By Lemma 13.6,  $E_n$  has a regular extension  $E_{n+1}$  such

that  $\text{Res}_{E_{n+1}/E_n}(X(E_{n+1})) = C_n$  and  $\text{Res}_{E_{n+1}/E_n}: X(E_{n+1}) \rightarrow C_n$  has a continuous section  $s_n$ . Then  $C_{n+1} = s_n(C_n)$  is a closed subset of  $X(E_{n+1})$ , and  $\text{Res}_{E_{n+1}/E_n}$  maps  $C_{n+1}$  homeomorphically onto  $C_n$ .

Now let  $E = \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} E_n$ . Then  $X(E) = \varprojlim C_n$ . Conclude that for each  $n$ ,  $\text{Res}_{E/E_n}$  maps  $X(E)$  homeomorphically onto  $C_n$ . ■

DEFINITION 13.8: Recall that an extension of fields  $E/K$  is totally  $p$ -adic if

$$\text{Res}_{E/K}: X(E) \rightarrow X(K)$$

is surjective (Section 12). We say that  $E/K$  is **exactly  $p$ -adic** if  $\text{Res}_{E/K}: X(E) \rightarrow X(K)$  is a homeomorphism.

The field  $K$  is **existentially closed** in  $E$  if each formula without quantifiers in the language of fields with coefficients in  $K$  which is satisfiable in  $E$  is satisfiable in  $K$ .

LEMMA 13.9: *Let  $K$  be a field.*

- (a) *If  $K$  is PpC (Definition 12.2), then  $K$  is existentially closed in every regular totally  $p$ -adic extension.*
- (b) *If  $K$  is existentially closed in every regular exactly  $p$ -adic extension, then  $K$  is PpC.*

*Proof of (a): Let  $E$  be a regular totally  $p$ -adic extension of  $K$ . We have to show that if  $f_1, \dots, f_r, g_1, \dots, g_s \in K[X_1, \dots, X_n]$  and the system*

$$(14) \quad f_i(\mathbf{X}) = 0, \quad i = 1, \dots, r; \quad g_j(\mathbf{X}) \neq 0, \quad j = 1, \dots, s$$

*has a solution  $\mathbf{x} \in E^n$ , then it also has a solution in  $K^n$ . Replace  $g_j(\mathbf{X}) \neq 0, j = 1, \dots, s$ , if necessary, by the equation  $g_1(\mathbf{X}) \cdots g_s(\mathbf{X})X_{n+1} - 1 = 0$  to assume that  $s = 0$ . Since  $K(\mathbf{x})/K$  is a regular extension,  $\mathbf{x}$  generates over  $K$  an absolutely irreducible variety  $V$ . Since  $K(\mathbf{x})/K$  is totally  $p$ -adic, Lemma 12.1(c) implies that  $V_{\text{sim}}(\overline{K}) \neq \emptyset$  for each  $p$ -adic closure  $\overline{K}$  of  $K$ . Conclude from  $K$  being PpC that  $V$  has a  $K$ -rational point  $\mathbf{x}'$ . This point solves (14).*

*Proof of (b): Let  $V$  be an absolutely irreducible variety defined over  $K$ . Denote the function field of  $V$  by  $E$  and assume that  $E/K$  is totally  $p$ -adic. By Proposition 13.4,*



the surjective map  $\text{Res}_{E/K}: X(E) \rightarrow X(K)$  has a continuous section  $s$ . Its image  $s(X(K))$  is closed in  $X(E)$ . By Lemma 13.7,  $E$  has a regular extension  $F$  such that  $\text{Res}_{F/E}$  maps  $X(F)$  homeomorphically onto  $s(X(K))$ . Hence  $\text{Res}_{F/K}: X(F) \rightarrow X(K)$  is a homeomorphism. Thus  $F/K$  is a regular exactly  $p$ -adic extension. It follows that  $K$  is existentially closed in  $F$ . Since  $V$  has an  $F$ -rational point it also has a  $K$ -rational point. ■

PROPOSITION 13.10: Let  $L/K$  be a Galois extension and let  $C$  be a closed subset of  $X(L/K)$  which is closed under the action of  $\mathcal{G}(L/K)$ . Then there exists a Galois extension  $F/E$  such that  $E$  is a regular PpC extension of  $K$ ,  $LE = F$ , the map  $\text{Res}_{F/L}: \mathcal{G}(F/E) \rightarrow \mathcal{G}(L/K)$  is an isomorphism, and  $\text{Res}_{F/L}$  maps  $X(F/E)$  homeomorphically onto  $C$ .

*Proof:* Let  $C_0 = \text{Res}_{L/K}(C)$ . Lemma 13.6 gives a regular extension  $K'$  of  $K$  such that  $\text{Res}_{K'/K}$  maps  $X(K')$  homeomorphically onto  $C_0$ . Denote the class of regular exactly  $p$ -adic extensions of  $K'$  by  $\mathcal{E}$ . Clearly,  $\mathcal{E}$  is closed under union of chains. Hence  $\mathcal{E}$  has a member  $E$  which is existentially closed in each  $E' \in \mathcal{E}$  that contains  $E$  [D, p. 28]. If  $E''$  is an exactly  $p$ -adic extension of  $E$ , then  $E''$  is an exactly  $p$ -adic extension of  $K'$ . Hence  $E'' \in \mathcal{E}$  and therefore  $E$  is existentially closed in  $E''$ . Conclude from Lemma 13.9(b) that  $E$  is PpC. By construction  $E$  is a regular extension of  $K$  and  $\text{Res}_{E/K}$  maps  $X(E)$  homeomorphically onto  $C_0$ . In particular, for  $F = LE$ ,  $\text{Res}_{F/L}: \mathcal{G}(F/E) \rightarrow \mathcal{G}(L/K)$  is an isomorphism.

If  $\theta' \in X(F/E)$ , then  $\text{Res}_{L/K}(\text{Res}_{F/L}\theta') = \text{Res}_{E/K}(\text{Res}_{F/E}\theta') \in C_0$ . Since  $\text{Res}_{L/K}: \mathbf{G}(L/K) \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(K/K)$  is a cover and  $C$  is closed under the action of  $\mathcal{G}(L/K)$ , we have  $\text{Res}_{F/L}\theta' \in C$ . Conversely, if  $\theta \in C$ , then there exists  $\theta'_0 \in X(E)$  such that  $\text{Res}_{L/K}\theta = \text{Res}_{E/K}\theta'_0$ . Extend  $\theta'_0$  to  $\theta'' \in X(F/E)$ . Then  $\text{Res}_{L/K}(\text{Res}_{F/L}\theta'') = \text{Res}_{L/K}(\theta)$ . Hence there exists  $\sigma \in \mathcal{G}(L/K)$  such that  $(\text{Res}_{F/L}\theta'')^\sigma = \theta$ . Extend  $\sigma$  to  $\sigma' \in \mathcal{G}(F/E)$ . Then  $\text{Res}_{F/L}$  maps  $(\theta'')^{\sigma'}$  onto  $\theta$ . If  $\text{Res}_{F/L}$  maps  $\theta'_1, \theta'_2 \in X(F/E)$  onto the same element  $\theta \in X(L/K)$ , then, since  $\text{Res}_{E/K}: X(E) \rightarrow X(K)$  is injective, there exists  $\sigma' \in \mathcal{G}(F/E)$  such that  $\theta'_2 = (\theta'_1)^{\sigma'}$ . Hence,  $\theta = \theta^\sigma$ , where  $\sigma = \text{Res}_{F/L}\sigma'$ . Since the action of  $\mathcal{G}(L/K)$  on  $X(L/K)$  is regular,  $\sigma = 1$ . Hence  $\sigma' = 1$ . Thus  $\text{Res}_{F/L}: X(F/K) \rightarrow C$  is a bijective continuous map. Conclude that it is a homeomor-

phism. ■

The following Proposition is the  $p$ -adic analogue of a result of Craven [C, Thm 5] for spaces of orderings.

PROPOSITION 13.11: For every Boolean space  $X$  there exists a PpC field  $E$  such that  $X(E)$  is homeomorphic to  $X$ .

*Proof:* By Proposition 13.10 it suffices to construct a field  $K$  and an embedding of  $X$  into  $X(K)$ . Since every Boolean space is homeomorphic to a closed subset of the space  $\{\pm 1\}^T$ , for a suitable set  $T$  [HJ, Definition 1.1], we may assume that  $X = \{\pm 1\}^T$ . Assume without loss that  $T$  is an ordered set of algebraically independent elements over  $\mathbb{Q}$  and let  $E = \mathbb{Q}(T)$ . Denote the unique  $\Theta$ -site of  $\mathbb{Q}$  by  $\theta$ . For each  $\varepsilon \in X$  (i.e.,  $\varepsilon: T \rightarrow \{\pm 1\}$ ) let  $\theta_\varepsilon = (\pi_\varepsilon, \varphi_\varepsilon) \in X(E)$  be the unique extension of  $\theta$  to  $E$  such that  $\pi_\varepsilon(at) = 0$  for each  $t \in T$  and each  $a \in \mathbb{Q}(t_0 | t_0 < t)$ , and  $\varphi_\varepsilon(t) = \varepsilon(t)t$  (Lemma 13.2).

The map  $\varepsilon \mapsto \theta_\varepsilon$  from  $X$  into  $X(E)$  is obviously injective. To show that it is continuous consider  $a_1, \dots, a_n \in E$ . Let  $T_0$  be a finite subset of  $T$  such that  $a_1, \dots, a_n \in \mathbb{Q}(T_0)$ . If two elements  $\varepsilon, \varepsilon' \in X$  coincide on  $T_0$ , then  $\varphi_\varepsilon(t) = \varphi_{\varepsilon'}(t)$  for each  $t \in T_0$ . By the uniqueness part of Lemma 13.2,  $\theta_\varepsilon = \theta_{\varepsilon'}$ . Conclude from Lemma 10.5 that the map  $\varepsilon \mapsto \theta_\varepsilon$  is continuous. ■

#### 14. Realization of $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structures as $\mathbf{G}(F/E)$ .

PROPOSITION 14.1: *Let  $L/K$  be a Galois extension,  $\mathbf{G}$  a  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure and  $\alpha: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(L/K)$  an epimorphism. Then there exists a Galois extension  $F/E$  such that  $E$  is a regular PpC totally  $p$ -adic extension of  $K$ ,  $L \subseteq F$  and there exists a commutative diagram*

$$(1) \quad \begin{array}{ccc} \mathbf{G} & \xrightarrow{\rho} & \mathbf{G}(F/E) \\ & \searrow \alpha & \swarrow \text{Res}_{F/L} \\ & & \mathbf{G}(L/K) \end{array}$$

in which  $\rho$  is an epimorphism of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structures and the underlying map of groups  $\rho: G \rightarrow \mathcal{G}(F/E)$  is an isomorphism. Moreover, if the forgetful map of  $\mathbf{G}$  is injective, then  $\rho: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(F/E)$  is an isomorphism.

*Proof:* It suffices to prove the existence of a commutative diagram (1) such that  $E$  is a regular extension of  $K$ ,  $F/E$  is Galois,  $L \subseteq F$ ,  $\rho: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(F/E)$  is a morphism and  $\rho: G \rightarrow \mathcal{G}(F/E)$  is an isomorphism. Indeed, use Proposition 13.10 to construct a Galois extension  $F'/E'$  such that  $E'$  is a regular PpC extension of  $E$ ,  $F'E' = F'$  and

$$\text{Res}_{F'/F}: \langle \mathcal{G}(F'/E'), X(F'/E'), d \rangle \longrightarrow \langle \mathcal{G}(F/E), \rho(X(\mathbf{G})), d \rangle$$

is an isomorphism of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structures. Then replace  $\rho$ ,  $E$  and  $F$  in (1), respectively, by  $\rho' = \text{Res}_{F'/F}^{-1} \circ \rho$ ,  $E'$  and  $F'$  to obtain a commutative diagram with the required conditions. Note that since  $\alpha$  is an epimorphism, so is  $\text{res}_{F/L}: X(E) \rightarrow X(K)$ . Hence  $E'/K$  is a totally  $p$ -adic extension. Also, if the forgetful map of  $\mathbf{G}$  is injective and for  $x, x' \in X(\mathbf{G})$ ,  $\rho'(x) = \rho'(x')$ , then  $\rho' \circ d(x) = \rho' \circ d(x')$ . Hence  $d(x) = d(x')$  and  $x = x'$ . Thus in this case  $\rho'$  is an isomorphism of  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structures.

The rest of the proof splits into five parts.

PART A: *Reduction to the case where  $\alpha$  is rigid (Definition 5.5).* Let  $L'$  be a Galois extension of  $K$  that contains  $L$  such that  $D(\theta) \cong G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  for each  $\theta \in X(L'/K)$ . For example, by Lemma 10.8(b), this is the case for  $L' = \tilde{K}$ . Construct a cartesian square

(Lemma 2.1):

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathbf{G}' & \xrightarrow{\alpha'} & \mathbf{G}(L'/K) \\ \pi \downarrow & & \downarrow \text{Res}_{L'/L} \\ \mathbf{G} & \xrightarrow{\alpha} & \mathbf{G}(L/K) \end{array}$$

Then  $\alpha'$  is a rigid morphism (i.e.,  $\alpha': D(y') \rightarrow D(\alpha'(y'))$  is an isomorphism for each  $y' \in X(\mathbf{G}')$ ). Suppose that there is a Galois extension  $F'/E$  such that  $E$  is a regular extension of  $K$ ,  $L' \subseteq F'$ , and there is a morphism  $\rho': \mathbf{G}' \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(F'/E)$  such that  $\rho': G' \rightarrow \mathcal{G}(F'/E)$  is an isomorphism of groups, and the upper face of the following diagram commutes:

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} \mathbf{G}' & \xrightarrow{\rho'} & & \mathbf{G}(F'/E) & \\ & \searrow \alpha' & & \swarrow \text{Res}_{F'/L'} & \\ & & \mathbf{G}(L'/K) & & \\ & \swarrow \pi & & \downarrow \text{Res}_{F'/F} & \\ \mathbf{G} & \xrightarrow{\rho} & & \mathbf{G}(F/E) & \\ & \searrow \alpha & & \swarrow \text{Res}_{F/L} & \\ & & \mathbf{G}(L/K) & & \end{array}$$

Since  $\text{Res}_{L'/L}: \mathbf{G}(L'/K) \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(L/K)$  is a cover, so is  $\pi$  (Lemma 2.2). Let  $F$  be the fixed field of  $\rho'(\text{Ker}(\pi))$ . Then  $\rho'$  induces a morphism  $\rho$  such that the back face of (2) commutes. Also

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Res}_{F'/L}(\mathcal{G}(F'/F)) &= \text{Res}_{L'/L} \circ \text{Res}_{F'/L'} \circ \rho'(\text{Ker}(\pi)) \\ &= \text{Res}_{L'/L} \circ \alpha'(\text{Ker}(\pi)) = \alpha \circ \pi(\text{Ker}(\pi)) = 1. \end{aligned}$$

Hence  $L \subseteq F$  and the right face of (2) commutes. Conclude from the surjectivity of  $\pi$  that the lower face of (2) commutes.

So we may assume that  $\alpha$  is a rigid morphism.

PART B: *Definition of  $E$  and  $F$ .* Let  $\mathcal{N}$  be the family of open normal subgroups  $N$  of  $G$  for which the induced morphism  $\alpha_N: \mathbf{G}/N \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(L/K)/\alpha(N)$  is rigid. By Lemma 5.6,  $\mathcal{N}$  is a basis for the open neighborhoods of 1 in  $G$ . For each  $N \in \mathcal{N}$  choose  $a_N \in L$

such that  $K(a_N)$  is the fixed field of  $\alpha(N)$  in  $L$ . Thus  $\alpha_N: \mathbf{G}/N \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(K(a_N)/K)$  is a rigid morphism.

Let  $\mathcal{C} = \{N\sigma \mid N \in \mathcal{N}, \sigma \in G\}$  and let  $T = \{t_C \mid C \in \mathcal{C}\}$  be a set of algebraically independent elements over  $L$ . Define an action of  $G$  on  $F = L(T)$  by the following rules:

$$\begin{cases} z^\sigma = z^{\alpha(\sigma)}, & z \in L \text{ and } \sigma \in G; \text{ and} \\ (t_C)^\sigma = t_{C\sigma} & C \in \mathcal{C} \text{ and } \sigma \in G. \end{cases}$$

Then  $G$  acts faithfully on  $T$  and therefore also on  $F$ . The stabilizer of  $z \in L$  is  $\alpha^{-1}(\mathcal{G}(L/K(z)))$  and the stabilizer of  $t_{N\sigma}$  is  $N$ . Both are open subgroups of  $G$ . Hence the stabilizer of each element of  $F$  is open in  $G$ .

Let  $E$  be the fixed field of  $G$  in  $F$ . By [W, Thm. 1] there exists an isomorphism  $\rho: G \rightarrow \mathcal{G}(F/E)$  compatible with the action on  $F$ . In particular the following diagram of groups commutes: Since  $G$  acts on  $L$  as  $\mathcal{G}(L/K)$ , we have  $L \cap E = K$ . Since  $F/L$  is a purely transcendental extension  $EL/L$  is regular. Hence  $E/K$  is also regular.

PART C: *Purely transcendental extensions.* Let  $x \in X(\mathbf{G})$ . Denote the fixed field of  $\rho(D(x))$  (resp.,  $\alpha(D(x))$ ) in  $F$  (resp.,  $L$ ) by  $M'$  (resp.,  $M$ ). We prove that  $M'$  is a purely transcendental extension of  $M$ .

Indeed, the commutativity of (3) implies that  $\text{Res}_{F/L}(\rho(D(x))) = \alpha(D(x))$ , therefore  $M \subseteq M'$ . Since  $\alpha$  is injective on  $D(x)$  and  $\rho$  is an isomorphism,  $\text{Res}_{F/L}: \mathcal{G}(F/M') \rightarrow \mathcal{G}(F/M)$  is an isomorphism. Thus  $LM' = F$  and  $L \cap M' = M$ .

The group  $D(x)$  acts on  $T$  (as a subgroup of  $G$ ). Let  $\mathcal{T}_x$  be the collection of  $D(x)$ -orbits of  $T$ . Each  $S \in \mathcal{T}_x$  has the form  $S = \{t_{N\sigma\delta} \mid \delta \in D(x)\}$ , with  $N \in \mathcal{N}$  and  $\sigma \in G$ . Since  $N$  is the stabilizer of each element of  $S$ ,  $|S| = (D(x) : D(x) \cap N) = (D(x)N : N)$ . So, if  $\delta_1, \dots, \delta_n \in D(x)$  represent  $D(x)N/N$ , then  $S = \{t_{N\sigma\delta_i} \mid i = 1, \dots, n\}$  with  $n = |S|$ .  
Let

$$(4) \quad u_{S,j} = \sum_{i=1}^n a_N^{(j-1)\delta_i} t_{N\sigma\delta_i}, \quad j = 1, \dots, n.$$

Since  $N$  acts trivially on  $a_N$ , the right hand side of (4) is independent of the choice of  $\delta_1, \dots, \delta_n$ . In particular  $D(x)$  acts trivially on  $u_{S,j}$ . So  $u_{S,j} \in M'$ ,  $j = 1, \dots, n$ .

Since  $\alpha_N: \mathbf{G}/N \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(K(a_N)/K)$  is rigid (Part B),  $\alpha_N$  maps  $D(x)N/N$  injectively into  $\mathcal{G}(K(a_N)/K)$ . In particular  $a_N^{\delta_1}, \dots, a_N^{\delta_n}$  are distinct. Hence the coefficients matrix

$(a_N^{(j-1)\delta_i})_{i,j=1}^n$  of the linear system (4), which is a Vandermonde matrix, is invertible. It follows that

$$(5) \quad L(u_{S,j} | j = 1, \dots, n) = L(S).$$

Since  $S$  is a set of  $n$  algebraically independent elements over  $L$ , (5) implies that  $u_{S,j}, j = 1, \dots, n$ , are also algebraically independent over  $L$ .

Let  $U_x = \{u_{S,j} | S \in \mathcal{T}_x \text{ and } j = 1, \dots, |S|\}$ . Since  $L(S), S \in \mathcal{T}_x$ , are free over  $L$ , the elements of  $U_x$  are algebraically independent over  $L$ . Moreover, by (5),  $L(U_x) = L(T) = F$ . Hence, the linear disjointness of  $L$  and  $M'$  over  $M$  gives  $[M' : M(U_x)] = [F : L(U_x)] = 1$ . Conclude that  $M' = M(U_x)$  is purely transcendental over  $M$ .

PART D: *Definition of  $\rho: X(\mathbf{G}) \rightarrow X(F/E)$ .* Fix an ordering of  $F$  (as a set). For each  $x \in X(\mathbf{G})$ , it induces an ordering of  $U_x$  (We use the notation of Part C). By (2) of Section 10,  $\alpha(x) \in X(L/M)$ . Define  $\rho(x)$  to be the infinitesimal extension of  $\alpha(x)$  with respect to  $U_x$  (Definition 13.3). Then  $\rho(x) \in X(L(U_x)/M(U_x)) = X(F/M') \subseteq X(F/E)$ , and  $\text{Res}_{F/L} \circ \rho(x) = \alpha(x)$ . The images of both homomorphisms  $\rho \circ d(x)$  and  $d(\rho(x))$  from  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  into  $\mathcal{G}(F/E)$  are contained in  $\mathcal{G}(F/M')$ . Moreover,

$$\text{Res}_{F/L} \circ \rho \circ d(x) = \alpha \circ d(x) = d(\alpha(x)) = d(\text{Res}_{F/L}(\rho(x))) = \text{Res}_{F/L} \circ d(\rho(x)).$$

Since  $\text{Res}_{F/L}$  is injective on  $\mathcal{G}(F/M')$ , we have  $\rho \circ d(x) = d(\rho(x))$ .

PART E: *Continuity of  $\rho: X(\mathbf{G}) \rightarrow X(F/E)$ .* Let  $x \in X(\mathbf{G})$ . Each open neighborhood of  $\rho(x) = (\pi_x, \varphi_x)$  in  $X(F/E)$  contains a basic open neighborhood of the form

$$V = \{(\pi, \varphi) \in X(F/E) | \varphi(a_i) \in V_i, i = 1, \dots, k\}$$

for some  $a_1, \dots, a_k \in F^\times$  and open subsets  $V_1, \dots, V_k$  of  $\tilde{\Phi}$  (Lemma 10.3(b)). Since  $F = L(U_x)$  there are  $u_i = u_{S(i),j(i)} \in U_x, i = 1, \dots, r$ , such that  $a_1, \dots, a_k \in L(u_1, \dots, u_r)$ . Let  $N_i$  be the stabilizer of the elements of  $S(i), i = 1, \dots, r$ . There exists an open neighborhood  $W_1$  of  $x$  in  $X(\mathbf{G})$  such that for each  $z \in W_1, D(x)N_i = D(z)N_i, i = 1, \dots, r$ . Hence  $S(1), \dots, S(r) \in \mathcal{T}_z$  and  $u_1, \dots, u_r \in U_z$ . Let  $F_0 = L(u_1, \dots, u_r)$  and  $E_0 = K(u_1, \dots, u_r)$ . The definition of  $\rho(x)$  and  $\rho(z) = (\pi_z, \varphi_z)$  imply that

$\text{Res}_{F/F_0}(\rho(x))$  and  $\text{Res}_{F/F_0}(\rho(z))$  are respectively the infinitesimal extensions of  $\alpha(x)$  and  $\alpha(z)$  to  $X(F_0/E_0)$  with respect to  $\{u_1, \dots, u_r\}$ . Since  $\alpha$  and the infinitesimal extension map from  $X(L/K)$  into  $X(F_0/E_0)$  are continuous (Lemma 13.2)  $W_1$  contains an open neighborhood  $W_2$  of  $x$  such that if  $z \in W_2$ , then  $\varphi_z(a_i) \in V_i$ ,  $1, \dots, k$ . Therefore  $\rho(z) \in V$ . Conclude that  $\rho: X(\mathbf{G}) \rightarrow X(F/E)$  is continuous.

PART F: *Conclusion of the proof.* We still have to ensure that  $\rho(x^\sigma) = \rho(x)^{\rho(\sigma)}$  for all  $x \in X(\mathbf{G})$  and  $\sigma \in G$ . Unfortunately this need not be the case. So we have to modify the definition of  $\rho: X(\mathbf{G}) \rightarrow X(F/E)$ . By Lemma 2.5,  $X(\mathbf{G})$  has a closed system  $X$  of representatives for the  $G$ -orbits. Denote the restriction of  $\rho: X(\mathbf{G}) \rightarrow X(F/E)$  and  $\alpha: X(\mathbf{G}) \rightarrow X(L/K)$  to  $X$  by  $\rho_0$  and  $\alpha_0$ , respectively. By Part D,  $\text{Res}_{F/L} \circ \rho_0(x) = \alpha_0(x)$  and  $d(\rho_0(x)) = \rho(d(x))$  for each  $x \in X$ . Hence, by Lemma 2.7,  $\rho_0$  extends to a map of  $X(\mathbf{G})$  into  $X(F/E)$  which, together with the group isomorphism  $\rho: G \rightarrow \mathcal{G}(F/E)$ , is a morphism  $\rho: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(F/E)$  (this is the modified  $\rho$ ). Moreover, both  $\text{Res}_{F/L} \circ \rho$  and  $\alpha$  coincide on  $X$  with  $\rho_0$  and on  $G$  with  $\alpha_0$ . Hence, by Lemma 2.7,  $\text{Res}_{F/L} \circ \rho = \alpha$ .

The modified morphism  $\rho$  satisfies the requirements of the proposition. ■

COROLLARY 14.2: Let  $\mathbf{G}$  be a  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure. Then there exists a PpC field  $E$  and a Galois extension  $F$  of  $E$  such that  $\mathbf{G} \cong \mathbf{G}(F/E)$ .

*Proof:* The quotient space  $X(\mathbf{G})/G$  is Boolean. Hence, by Proposition 13.11, there exists a PpC field  $K$  such that  $X(K) \cong X(\mathbf{G})/G$ . This isomorphism defines a cover  $\alpha: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(K/K)$ . By Proposition 14.1,  $K$  has a PpC extension  $E$  which has a Galois extension  $F$ , and there exists an epimorphism  $\rho: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(F/E)$  with a trivial kernel such that the diagram (1), with  $L = K$ , commutes. Since  $\alpha$  is a cover, so is  $\rho$ . Hence  $\rho$  is indeed an isomorphism. ■

## 15. The main results.

We are finally able to characterize the  $p$ -adically projective groups as absolute Galois groups of PpC fields. An analogous characterization holds for projective  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structures.

**THEOREM 15.1:** *Let  $K$  be a PpC field. Then*

- (a)  $G(K)$  is a  $p$ -adically projective group; and
- (b)  $\mathbf{G}(K)$  is a projective  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure.

*Proof:* Let  $X = X(\tilde{K}/K)$  and let  $\mathcal{D}$  be the collection of all subgroups  $G(M)$  of  $G(K)$  where  $M$  is a  $p$ -adically closed field and  $K \subseteq M \subseteq \tilde{K}$ . By Lemma 10.8(d) and (e) the forgetful map  $d: X \rightarrow \text{Hom}(G(\mathbb{Q}_p), G(K))$  is injective and  $\mathcal{D} = \{D(\theta) \mid \theta \in X\}$  is the collection of all decomposition groups of the elements of  $X$ . In particular  $\mathcal{D}$  is a closed conjugacy domain of subgroups of  $G(K)$ . Also, for each  $\theta, \theta' \in X$ ,  $D(\theta) = D(\theta')$  if and only if there exists  $\sigma \in D(\theta)$  such that  $\theta^\sigma = \theta'$  (Lemma 10.8(c)). We show that  $G(K)$  is  $\mathcal{D}$ -projective (Definition 4.1).

Consider a finite embedding problem for  $G(K)$

$$\begin{array}{ccc} & & G(K) \\ & & \downarrow \text{res} \\ B & \xrightarrow{\alpha} & \mathcal{G}(L/K) \end{array}$$

with  $L/K$  a finite Galois extension. Let  $X_0$  be a closed system of representatives for the  $\mathcal{G}(L/K)$ -orbits of  $X(L/K)$  (Corollary 2.5). Since  $\mathcal{G}(L/K)$  is finite the subset  $\{d(\theta) \mid \theta \in X_0\}$  of  $\text{Hom}(G(\mathbb{Q}_p), \mathcal{G}(L/K))$  is finite. Let  $\bar{\psi}_1, \dots, \bar{\psi}_n$  be a listing of its elements. Choose  $\bar{\theta}_i \in X_0$  such that  $d(\bar{\theta}_i) = \bar{\psi}_i$  and let  $\theta_i \in X$  be an extension of  $\bar{\theta}_i$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, n$ . By Remark 4.2 there exists  $\psi_i \in \text{Hom}(G(\mathbb{Q}_p), B)$  such that  $\alpha \circ \psi_i = \text{res} \circ d(\theta_i) = \bar{\psi}_i$ ,  $i = 1, \dots, n$  (Remark 4.2). Define a map  $d_0: X_0 \rightarrow \text{Hom}(G(\mathbb{Q}_p), B)$  by the rule,  $d_0(\theta) = \psi_i$  if and only if  $d(\theta) = \bar{\psi}_i$ . Since  $d$  is continuous, so is  $d_0$ . By Lemma 2.6, there is a  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure  $\mathbf{B}$  with  $B$  the underlying group,  $X_0$  a closed system of representatives for the  $B$ -orbits of  $X(\mathbf{B})$ , and such that the forgetful map extends  $d_0$ . The epimorphism  $\alpha$  together with the identity map define a cover  $\alpha: \mathbf{B} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(L/K)$  (Lemma 2.7).



Apply Proposition 14.1 to construct a Galois extension  $F/E$  such that  $E$  is a regular totally  $p$ -adic extension of  $K$  and  $L \subseteq F$ , and a commutative diagram of groups

$$\begin{array}{ccc} B & \xrightarrow{\rho} & \mathcal{G}(F/E) \\ & \searrow \alpha & \swarrow \text{res} \\ & & \mathcal{G}(L/K) \end{array}$$

such that  $\rho$  is an isomorphism. There will be no loss to assume that  $B = \mathcal{G}(F/E)$  and  $\alpha = \text{res}_{F/L}$ . Also, replace  $E$  and  $F$ , if necessary, by a sufficiently large finitely generated subextensions of  $K$  and  $L$ , to assume that  $E$  is finitely generated over  $K$ .

Let  $z$  be a primitive element for  $F/E$ , let  $f = \text{irr}(z, E)$  and let  $c \in E$  be the discriminant of  $f$ . Take an integrally closed domain  $R$ , finitely generated over  $K$ , which contains  $c^{-1}$  and the coefficients of  $f$ , and such that  $E$  is the quotient field of  $R$ . By definition of PpC field (Definition 12.2) there exists a  $K$ -homomorphism  $\psi: R \rightarrow K$ . Let  $S$  be the integral closure of  $R$  in  $F$  (and note that  $L \subseteq S$ ). Extend  $\psi$  to an  $L$ -homomorphism  $\psi: S \rightarrow \tilde{K}$ . Let  $D(\psi)$  be the decomposition group of  $\psi$  in  $\mathcal{G}(F/E)$  and let  $M$  be the splitting field of the polynomial  $\psi(f)$  over  $K$ . Then  $L \subseteq M$ , and  $\psi(f)$  has no multiple roots, since  $\psi(c) \neq 0$ . Then  $M/K$  is a Galois extension and  $\psi$  induces an isomorphism  $\psi_*: D(\psi) \rightarrow \mathcal{G}(M/K)$  such that  $\psi(y)^{\psi_*(\sigma)} = \psi(y^\sigma)$  for each  $\sigma \in D(\psi)$  and  $y \in S$  [L1, p. 248]. The homomorphism  $\psi_*^{-1} \circ \text{res}_{K/M}^\sim: G(K) \rightarrow \mathcal{G}(F/E)$  solves the embedding problem. Thus  $G(K)$  is  $\mathcal{D}$ -projective.

By Lemma 4.5(a),  $\mathcal{D}$  is the collection  $\mathcal{D}(G(K))$  of all closed subgroups of  $G(K)$  isomorphic to  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ . In particular  $G(K)$  is  $p$ -adically projective. For each  $\theta, \theta' \in X$ ,  $D(\theta) = D(\theta')$  if and only if there exists  $\sigma \in G(K)$  such that  $\theta^\sigma = \theta'$  (Lemma 10.8). Since the forgetful map of  $\mathbf{G}(K)$  is injective, the last statement of Proposition 5.4 implies that  $\mathbf{G}(K)$  is a projective  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure. ■

The proof of Theorem 15.1 gives an additional information on PpC fields.

**COROLLARY 15.2:** *Let  $K$  be a PpC field. Then a closed subgroup  $H$  of  $G(K)$  is isomorphic to  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  if and only if its fixed field  $M$  is  $p$ -adically closed.*

Now we prove the converse of Theorem 15.1.

THEOREM 15.3: Let  $\mathbf{G}$  be a projective  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -structure. Let  $L/K$  be a Galois extension and  $\alpha: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(L/K)$  an epimorphism. Then there exists a totally  $p$ -adic PpC extension  $E$  of  $K$  and a commutative diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathbf{G} & \xrightarrow{\rho} & \mathbf{G}(E) \\ & \searrow \alpha & \swarrow \text{res} \\ & \mathbf{G}(L/K) & \end{array}$$

in which  $\rho$  is an isomorphism.

*Proof:* The forgetful map of  $\mathbf{G}$  is injective (Lemma 5.3(a)). Hence, Proposition 14.1 gives a totally  $p$ -adic PpC extension  $E_1$  of  $K$ , a Galois extension  $F_1$  of  $E_1$  that contains  $L$ , and an isomorphism  $\rho_1$  such that the following diagram commutes

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathbf{G} & \xrightarrow{\rho_1} & \mathbf{G}(E) \\ & \searrow \alpha & \swarrow \text{res} \\ & \mathbf{G}(L/K) & \end{array}$$

Since  $\text{res}_{\tilde{E}_1/F_1}: \mathbf{G}(E_1) \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(F_1/E_1)$  is a cover and  $\mathbf{G}$  is projective, there exists a morphism  $\alpha_1: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(E_1)$  such that  $\text{res}_{\tilde{E}_1/F_1} \circ \alpha_1 = \rho_1$  (Lemma 5.2). Since  $\rho_1$  is an isomorphism,  $\alpha_1: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(E_1)$  and  $\alpha_1: X(\mathbf{G}) \rightarrow X(\tilde{E}_1/E_1)$  are injective.

Let  $K_1$  be the fixed field of  $\alpha_1(\mathbf{G})$  in  $\tilde{E}_1$ . Then  $\alpha_1(\mathbf{G}) = G(K_1)$ . We prove also that  $\alpha_1(X(\mathbf{G})) = X(\tilde{K}_1/K_1)$ . Indeed, for each  $x \in X(\mathbf{G})$ ,  $D(\alpha_1(x)) = \alpha_1(D(x)) \leq \alpha_1(\mathbf{G}) = G(K_1)$ . Hence, by (2) of Section 10,  $\alpha_1(x) \in X(\tilde{K}_1/K_1)$ . Conversely, let  $\theta \in X(\tilde{K}_1/K_1)$ . Take the unique closed subgroup  $H$  of  $G$  such that  $\alpha_1(H) = D(\theta)$ . Since  $H \cong D(\theta) \cong G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$  (Lemma 10.8(b)) and since  $\mathbf{G}$  is  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -projective there exists  $x \in X(\mathbf{G})$  such that  $D(x) = H$  (Lemma 5.3(c)). Thus  $D(\theta) = \alpha_1(H) = D(\alpha_1(x))$ . Hence, by Lemma 5.3(d), there exists  $\sigma \in G$  such that  $\theta = \alpha_1(x)^{\alpha_1(\sigma)} = \alpha_1(x^\sigma) \in \alpha_1(X(\mathbf{G}))$ .

It follows that  $\alpha_1: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(K_1)$  is an isomorphism and the following diagram commutes

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathbf{G} & \xrightarrow{\alpha_1} & \mathbf{G}(K_1) \\ \alpha \downarrow & \rho_1 & \text{res} \downarrow \\ \mathbf{G}(L/K) & \xleftarrow{\text{res}} & \mathbf{G}(F_1/E_1) \end{array}$$

We do not know if  $K_1$  is PpC. So we proceed as follows.

First observe that since  $\alpha_1$  and  $\rho_1$  are isomorphisms, so is  $\text{res}_{\tilde{K}_1/F_1} : \mathbf{G}(K_1) \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(F_1/E_1)$ . In particular  $K_1$  is totally  $p$ -adic over  $E_1$ . Repeat the above construction (with  $\alpha_1$  instead of  $\alpha$ ) and use induction to obtain an ascending chain of fields  $K = K_0 \subseteq E_1 \subseteq K_1 \subseteq E_2 \subseteq \dots$ , and isomorphisms  $\alpha_i: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(K_i)$ ,  $i = 1, 2, \dots$  such that

$$(2a) \text{res}_{\tilde{K}_{i+1}/K_i} \circ \alpha_{i+1} = \alpha_i, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots;$$

(2b)  $E_1, E_2, \dots$  are PpC fields; and

(2c)  $E_i/K_{i-1}$  and  $K_i/E_i$  are totally  $p$ -adic extensions (therefore so is  $E_{i+1}/E_i$ ),  $i = 1, 2, \dots$ .

Let  $E = \bigcup_{i=1}^{\infty} E_i = \bigcup_{i=1}^{\infty} K_i$ . The maps  $\alpha_i$  define an isomorphism  $\rho: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(E)$  such that (1) commutes. In particular  $E/K$  is totally  $p$ -adic. Furthermore,  $E$  is PpC. Indeed, let  $V$  be an absolutely irreducible variety defined over  $E$  with a function field  $F$ , totally  $p$ -adic over  $E$ . Then there exists  $i \geq 1$  such that  $V$  is defined over  $E_i$ . By (2c),  $F/E_i$  is totally  $p$ -adic. Hence, the function field of  $V$  over  $E_i$  (which is a subfield of  $F$ ) is totally  $p$ -adic over  $E_i$ . Since, by (2b),  $E_i$  is PpC,  $V$  has an  $E_i$ -rational point. This point is also  $E$ -rational. Conclude that  $E$  is PpC. ■

**THEOREM 15.4:** For each  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -projective group  $G$  there exists a PpC field  $E$  such that  $G(E) \cong G$ .

*Proof:* By Proposition 5.4(b) there exists a  $G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$ -projective structure  $\mathbf{G}$  with  $G$  as the underlying group. Proposition 13.11 gives a field  $K$  such that  $X(\mathbf{G})/G \cong X(K)$ . This isomorphism defines a cover  $\alpha: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(K/K)$ . Theorem 15.3 gives a PpC field  $E$  and an isomorphism  $\rho: \mathbf{G} \rightarrow \mathbf{G}(E)$ . In particular  $G(E) \cong G$ . ■

A well known theorem of Artin-Schreier says that each field  $K$  with  $G(K) \cong \mathbb{Z}/2\mathbb{Z}$  is real closed. The  $p$ -adic analogue is unknown.

**PROBLEM 15.5:** Is each field  $K$  with  $G(K) \cong G(\mathbb{Q}_p)$   $p$ -adically closed?

This question has an affirmative answer if  $K$  is algebraic over  $\mathbb{Q}$  (Neukirch's theorem [N2]) or  $K$  is algebraic over a PpC field (Corollary 15.2). L. Pop [P] generalizes Neukirch's theorem to the case where  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}K = \tilde{K}$ .

## References

- [A1] J. Ax, *The elementary theory of finite fields*, Annals of Mathematics **88** (1968), 239-271.
- [A2] J. Ax, *A mathematical approach to some problems in number theory*, AMS Proc. Symp. Pure Math. **XX** (1971), 161-190.
- [AK] J. Ax and S. Kochen, *Diophantine problems over local fields II*, American Journal of Mathematics **87** (1965), 631-648.
- [BS] Z.I. Borevich and I.R. Shafarevich, *Number Theory*, Academic Press, New York, 1966.
- [C] T. Craven, *The Boolean space of orderings of a field*, Transactions of AMS **209** (1975), 225-235.
- [D] L.P.D. v.d.Dries, *Model theory of fields*, Thesis, Utrecht, 1978.
- [Di] V. Diekert, *Über die absolute Galoisgruppe dyadischer Zahlkörper*, Journal für die reine und angewandte Mathematik **350** (1984), 152-172.
- [E] O. Endler, *Valuation theory*, Springer, Berlin, 1972.
- [En] A.J. Engler, *Fields with two incomparable Henselian valuation rings*, manuscripta mathematica **23** (1978), 373-385.
- [F] M. Fried, *irreducibility results for separated variables equations*
- [G] W.-D. Geyer, *Galois groups of intersections of local fields*, Israel Journal of Mathematics **30** (1978), 382-296.
- [HJ] D. Haran and M. Jarden, *The absolute Galois group of a pseudo real closed field*, Annali della Scuola Normale Superiore di Pisa **12** (1985), 449-489.
- [HL] D. Haran and A. Lubotzky, *Embedding covers and the theory of Frobenius fields*, Israel Journal of Mathematics **41** (1982), 181-202.
- [HP] B. Heinemann and A. Prestel, *Fields regularly closed with respect to finitely many valuations and orderings*, Canadian Mathematical Society Conference Proceedings **4** (1984), 297-336.
- [HR] W. Herfort and L. Ribes, *Torsion elements and centralizers in free products of profinite groups*, Journal für die reine und angewandte Mathematik **358** (1985), 155-161.
- [I] M. Ikeda, *Completeness of the absolute Galois group of the rational number field*, Journal für die reine und angewandte Mathematik **291** (1977), 1-21.
- [J1] M. Jarden, *The elementary theory of large  $e$ -fold ordered fields*, Acta mathematica **149** (1982), 240-260.
- [J2] M. Jarden, *Algebraic extensions of finite corank of Hilbertian fields*, Israel Journal of Mathematics **18** (1974), 270-307.
- [J3] M. Jarden, *The elementary theory of  $\omega$ -free Ax fields*, Inventiones mathematicae **38** (1976), 187-206
- [JW] U. Jannsen und K. Wingberg, *Die Struktur der absoluten Galoisgruppe  $p$ -adischer Zahlkörper*, Inventiones mathematicae **70** (1982), 70-98.

- [L1] S. Lang, *Algebra*, Addison-Wesley, Reading, 1970.
- [L2] S. Lang, *Algebraic number theory*, Addison-Wesley, Reading, 1970.
- [L3] S. Lang, *Introduction to algebraic geometry*, Interscience Publishers, New York, 1958.
- [LD] A. Lubotzky and L.v.d. Dries, *Subgroups of free profinite groups and large subfields of  $\tilde{\mathbb{Q}}$* , Israel Journal of Mathematics **39** (1981), 25-45.
- [M] A. Macintyre, *On definable subsets of  $p$ -adic fields*, Journal of Symbolic Logic **41** (1976), 605-611.
- [N1] J. Neukirch, *Über eine algebraische Kennzeichnung der Henselkörper*, Journal für die reine und angewandte Mathematik **231** (1968), 75-81.
- [N2] J. Neukirch, *Kennzeichnung der  $p$ -adischen und der endlichen algebraischen Zahlkörper*, Inventiones mathematicae **6** (1969), 296-314.
- [P] L. Pop, *Dissertation*, Heidelberg, 1987.
- [PR] A. Prestel and P. Roquette, *Formally  $p$ -adic fields*, Lecture Notes in Mathematics 1050, Springer, Berlin, 1984.
- [R] L. Ribes, *Introduction to profinite groups and Galois Cohomology*, Queen's papers in pure and applied Mathematics 24, Queen's University, Kingston, 1970.
- [Ri] P. Ribenboim, *Theorie des valuations*, Les Presses de l'Université de Montréal, Montréal, 1964.
- [S] F.K. Schmidt, *Körper über denen jede algebraische Gleichung durch Radikale auflösbar ist*, Sitzungsberichte der Heidelberg Akademie der Wissenschaft 2 (1933), 37-47.
- [Sc] A. Schinzel, *Reducibility of polynomials in several variables II*, Pacific Journal of Mathematics, **118** (1985), 531-563.
- [Se] J.-P. Serre, *Cohomologie Galoisienne*, Lecture Notes in Mathematics **5**, Springer, Heidelberg, 1965.
- [Sm] J.H. Smith, *On products of profinite groups*, Illinois Journal of Mathematics **13** (1969), 680-688.
- [W] K. Wingberg, *Der Eindeutigkeitssatz für Demuškinformationen*, Inventiones mathematicae **70** (1982), 99-113.
- [Wa] W.C. Waterhouse, *Profinite groups are Galois groups*, Proceedings of AMS **42** (1974), 639-640.
- [ZS] O. Zariski and P. Samuel, *Commutative Algebra I*, Springer, New York, 1975.

Address of the authors:

Dan Haran and Moshe Jarden  
 School of Mathematical Sciences  
 The Raymond and Beverly Sackler Faculty of Exact Sciences  
 Tel Aviv University  
 Ramat Aviv, Tel Aviv 69978  
 ISRAEL